THE

APPPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE

IN

ANGLO-SAXON

BY

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH IN THE UNIVERSITY OF TEXAS

JOHN MURPHY COMPANY, PRINTERS.
BALTIMORE.
CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION ........................................................................................................... 141
   I. The Dual Nature of the Participle; Definitions .............................................. 141
   II. The History of the Term Appositive Participle ........................................ 144
   III. The Relative Age of the Several Uses of the Participle.............................. 149
   IV. The Inflexion and the Position of the Appositive Participle........................ 150

CHAPTER I. STATISTICS OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON .................................................................................................................. 154
   I. In the Prose Works .......................................................................................... 155
   II. In the Poems .................................................................................................. 234
   III. Synoptic Table ............................................................................................. 266

CHAPTER II. USES OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON .................................................................................................................. 268
   I. The Adjectival Use ......................................................................................... 270
   II. The Adverbial Use ......................................................................................... 273
      1. Modal ........................................................................................................ 274
      2. Temporal .................................................................................................. 278
      3. Causal ...................................................................................................... 279
      4. Final .......................................................................................................... 280
      5. Concessive ................................................................................................. 282
      6. Conditional ............................................................................................... 284
   III. The Co-ordinate Use ..................................................................................... 285
      1. The “Circumstantial” Participle ................................................................ 286
      2. The “Iterating” Participle ......................................................................... 287
      3. Notes ......................................................................................................... 289
   IV. Summary of Uses .......................................................................................... 292

CHAPTER III. ORIGIN OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON .................................................................................................. 297
   I. The Adjectival Use ......................................................................................... 298
   II. The Adverbial Use ......................................................................................... 300
      1. Modal ........................................................................................................ 301
      2. Temporal .................................................................................................. 301
CONTENTS.

3. Causal................................................. 302
4. Final............................................ 304
5. Concessive..................................... 304
6. Conditional.................................... 305

III. The Co-ordinate Use............................ 306

IV. The Governing Power of the Participle...... 307
   1. The Present Participle..................... 307
   2. The Preterite Participle............... 313

V. Table of Latin Correspondences.............. 315

CHAPTER IV. THE ANGLO-SAXON RENDERING OF THE LATIN
APPPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE.......................... 321
   I. By a Co-ordinated Finite Verb........... 321
   II. By a Subordinated Finite Verb........ 323
   III. By a Prepositional Phrase............. 326
   IV. By a Verb in the Infinitive Mood...... 327
   V. By an Attributive Participle.......... 328
   VI. By an Absolute Participle............. 328
   VII. By an Adverb............................ 328
   VIII. By an Adjective....................... 328
   IX. By a Substantive......................... 329

CHAPTER V. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN THE OTHER GER-
MANIC LANGUAGES................................. 330
   I. Uses......................................... 330
      1. In Gothic.................................. 330
      2. In the Scandinavian Languages........ 332
      3. In High German........................... 334
      4. In Old Saxon............................. 338
   II. Origin...................................... 339
   III. Rendering of Greek and Latin Appositive Participle...... 341

CHAPTER VI. THE ANGLO-SAXON APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE AS A
NORM OF STYLE...................................... 344

CHAPTER VII. RESULTS.................................. 348

ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.......................... 353

BIBLIOGRAPHY........................................ 355
VIII.—THE APPOSITIONAL PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

INTRODUCTION.

I.

The twofold nature of the participle is sufficiently attested by the fact that it is universally defined as a verbal adjective. The genesis of this twofold nature has been interestingly discussed by Brugmann (I. F., v, 88 ff.; Gr. Gr.³ §§ 479 f.) and by Delbrück (II, p. 477). Mine is the humbler task of pointing out the various manifestations of this dual nature as exemplified in the appositive use of the participle in Anglo-Saxon; to which is appended a brief survey of the same phenomena in the other Germanic languages. This is by no means an easy task, since the same participle may be dominantly adjectival in one sentence, prevailing verbal in another, and equally divided between the two in a third. Of course, too, a participle may be used as a noun; but in such case it ceases to be a participle; hence in this paper no account is taken of the substantivized participle. However, certain adverbial uses of the participle are treated.

The difficulty of our problem is further aggravated by the diversity of meaning attached to the same term by different
grammarians. At the outset, therefore, it is necessary to define the terms used in this monograph. The study is based upon a twofold classification of the participle: (I) According to the nature of the participle; (II) According to the relationship of the participle to its subject (or principal).

According to its nature, a participle is (1) verbal when the assertive force is dominant, and (2) adjectival when the descriptive force is dominant; as a rule, the verbal participle denotes an act in the widest sense, while the adjectival denotes a state. These terms, of course, are relative only, and under different collocations each is equally applicable to the same word. Thus, in the phrase, the shining sun, shining is adjectival, if not an adjective; while in the sentence, The sun, shining through the trees, lighted our path, the participle is verbal. But, despite this relativity, the distinction is of great importance; and it is possible to mark off certain more or less stable groups. The preterite participle, for instance, is more adjectival than the present; as the present participle with an object is more verbal than one without an object. Occasionally, too, a participle is so constantly used adjectivally that it becomes an adjective proper, as in the case of the Latin sanctus, the A.-S. cuð, etc. The completely adjectivized participle is not treated in this monograph.

According to its relationship to its principal, a participle is (A) independent (or absolute) when its subject is grammatically independent of the rest of the sentence, and (B) dependent (or conjoint) when its subject is not grammatically independent of the rest of the sentence, but is intimately bound up therewith. Examples are:—(A): Bede¹ 284. 20: swa eallum geseondum upp in heofonas gewat = Bede² 220. 11: sic uidentibus cunctis ad alta subduxit (see my Abs. Pte. in A.-S., p. 5 ff.);—(B): Luke 4. 40: he syndrygun hys hand onsettende hig gehælde = ille singulis manus imponens curabat eos. The dependent (or conjoint) participle may be subdivided into (1) predicative (or supplementary, cf. Goodwin, Moods and Tenses, § 877), when the participle is joined to its
subject by means of a verb; (2) non-predicative (or assumptive, cf. Sweet, § 44), when not joined to its subject by the instrumentality of a verb. The predicative participle may be subdivided into (a) predicate nominative and (b) predicate accusative; the non-predicative (or assumptive), into (a) attributive, when the connection between the participle and its principal is so close that the two constitute one indivisible idea, and (b) appositive, when the connection between the participle and its principal is so loose that the two seem to constitute two independent ideas; or, to use the words of Sweet (§ 90): “When the subordination of an assumptive (attributive) word to its head-word is so slight that the two are almost co-ordinate, the adjunct-word is said to be in apposition to its head-word.” A few examples will suffice for illustration:—(1) Predicative (or Supplementary): (a) Predicate Nominative: Elene 492: Stephanus wæs stanum worpod;—ib. 486: ða ðy ðriddan dag lifgende aras, etc.;—(b) Predicate Accusative: Luke 22. 56: ða hine geseah sum ðinen æt leohte sittende = quem cum vidisset ancilla quædam sedentem ad lumen;—Bl. Hom. 218. 7: ða mette he ðane man forðferedne, etc.;—(2) Non-predicative (or Assumptive): (a) Attributive: Beow. 741: he gefeng hraðe forman siðe sleepependne rine;—ib. 581: ða meo sæ oððæor ... wudu weal-lendu;—ib. 1245: ðæor on bence wæs ... yðgesene ... hringed byrne;—ib. 216: guman ut soufom ... wudu bundenne, etc.;—(b) Appositive: Mat. 9. 12: se Hælend cwæð, ðis gehyrende = At Jesus audiens, ait;—Luke 1. 74: ðæor we bultan ege of ure feonda handa alysedæ him ðæowian = Ut sine timore, de manu ... liberati, serviamus illi;—Mat. 8. 9: Sovlice ic eom man under anwealdæ gesett = Nam et ego homo sum sub potestate constitutus;—Ælfr. Hom. 1, 62a: Johannes besæah to heofonum, ðæs cwæðende, etc.

No originality is claimed for the above classification; for, although I have not found the system as a whole in any treatise, almost every one of the terms is substantially so used in one or more standard works. Nor is the system
looked upon as ideal; it is given merely because it seems a fair working scheme for this monograph. But, while I believe that all my terms are clear as above defined and exemplified, the word appositive demands more extended treatment, since it gives the title to this paper.

II.

Remoteness from the larger libraries precludes my giving a complete history of the phrase appositive participle; and I must content myself with a brief statement concerning the more important grammatical treatises that have been accessible to me. Fortunately, as a reference to the bibliography will show, I have been able to consult all the most significant monographs (old as well as new) on the participle in Anglo-Saxon and in the other Teutonic tongues.

The phrase appositive participle is not used as a distinct category by Grimm, Becker, Mätzner, Koch, March, Sweet, or Delbrück among the Germanic grammarians, or by Classen, Draeger, Gildersleeve, or Goodwin among the classicists. The locution seems to have been habitually used first\(^1\) by Krüger and Curtius in their Greek grammars, by Madvig in his Latin grammar, by Gabelentz and Löbe in their Gothic grammar, and by Vernaleken in his *Deutsche Syntax*; and its present currency is perhaps largely due to the wide popularity of these works, especially the first three.

By the grammarians who regularly make use of the phrase, two distinct definitions have been given. The one set restricts the term appositive to the participle that is equal to a dependent adverbial (conjunctive) clause, while the other extends it also to the participle that is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause. Judged by their definitions, Krüger and Curtius originally sided with the former. Krüger's state-

\(^1\) In his Greek grammar of 1829 (pp. 469, 474), however, Bernhardy has a few words concerning the appositive use of the participle.
ment is as follows (p. 215): "Die appositive Participial-construction und ihr zur Seite gehend die absolute sind eine unklare Ausdrucksweise für Sätze die mit dem Hauptsatze in einem temporalen oder realen Verhältnisse stehen." Examples are cited of the appositive participle in (1) temporal, (2) conditional, (3) causal, and (4) concessive clauses, but not in adjectival (relative) clauses, though under the head of temporal uses (p. 217, 10, Anmk. 1) this remark is made: "In vielen Fällen übersetzen wir die Participa durch das Relativ oder durch Conjunctionen." To the same effect is the definition of Curtius (§ 579): "Das Partizip dient dazu, einem Substantiv etwas als eine nur vorübergehende Eigenschaft oder Thätigkeit beizulegen. In diesem Falle ist das Partizip eine kurze und unbestimmtere Ausdrucksweise für das, was sonst durch Nebensätze mit Conjunctionen der verschiedensten Art ausgedrückt wird." In the following sections (580–583) he gives examples of the appositive participle in (1) temporal, (2) causal and final, (3) concessive, and (4) conditional clauses; adding this note: "Bei dem mannichfaltigen Gebrauch der appositiven Partizipien ist nicht zu übersehen, dass ein solches Partizip an sich keine der in §§ 580–583 entwickelten Bedeutungen deutlich ausdrückt, dass wir viel mehr nur zur Übersetzung uns der einen oder der andern Wendung bedienen, um dasselbe in schärfenerer Weise auszusprechen, was durch das Partizip nur angedeutet.

1 I quote from the fifth edition of his Attische Syntax (Leipzig, 1873), but the same statement, I have been informed, occurs in the first edition (Leipzig, 1843).

2 I quote from the ninth edition (Prag, 1870), but substantially the same statement is made in the first edition (Prag, 1852). And in the chapter on the Participle in his Erläuterungen (Prag, 1852) Curtius thus acknowledges his indebtedness to Krüger: "In der Gliederung dieser Gebrauchsweisen bin ich wesentlich K. W. Krüger gefolgt, ohne jedoch in der Reihenfolge mich ihm anzuschliessen."—My quotation is from the third edition of the Erläuterungen (1875), but it does not differ essentially from the statement of the first edition (1863).

3 This note is not in the first edition of the grammar.
ist.” Gering specifically restricts the appositive participle to adverbial clauses (p. 393): “Während das attributive particip bestimmend und erklärend zu dem nomen tritt, dient das appositive dazu, gewisse adverbiale nebeneinbestimmungen der handlung auszudrücken. Es bezeichnet daher, in welcher zeit, aus welchem grunde, unter welchen bedingungen oder einschränkungen, durch welche mittel, auf welche art und weise eine person oder ein gegenstand etwas ausführte oder erlitt. Characteristisch für das appositive particip ist es, dass es nie den artikel bei sich hat.” The same restriction is made by Karl Köhler and by Kühn, though the latter does not use the term appositive, but speaks of the use of the participle “in eigentlicher participialer Funktion in Vertretung eines Adverbialsatzes.”

But, despite the high standing of Krüger, Curtius, and Gering, the restriction of the appositive participle to adverbial uses seems unwise. Indeed, it may be doubted whether Curtius intended so to limit the term by the definition above quoted; if so, he afterwards changed his mind, for in his Erläuterungen⁵ (p. 203) he gives a definition of the appositive participle that includes its use in adjectival (relative) as well as in adverbial (conjunctive) clauses: “Der ‘appositive Gebrauch’ schliesst sich an die § 361, 12 gegebene Definition der Apposition an. Wie ich unter Apposition einer Zusatz loserer Art verstehe, welcher in der Regel synonym mit einem beschreibenden Zwischen—or Nebensatz ist, so entsprechen die appositiven Partizipien als kürzere, losere und deshalb auch weniger bestimmte Ausdrucksweisen wesentlich denselben Zwecke, der in festerer Weise durch relative¹ und Conjuctionssätze erreicht wird.”

The remainder of his comment, though not on this point, is too instructive to omit: “Classen in seinen oben (S. 173) erwähnten Beobachtungen über den homerischen Sprachgebrauch nennt den von mir appositiv genannten Gebrauch

¹The italics are mine.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 147

prädicativ. Ich verkenne nicht, dass sich auch diese Bezeichnung rechtfertigen lässt, insofern als das appositive Partizip, unterschieden vom attributiven, allerdings eine aussagende, prädizierende Kraft besitzt, die am entschiedensten in den absoluten Participialconstructionen hervortritt. Allein es scheint mir doch gerathener, den Ausdruck prädicatives Partizip mit Krüger auf denjenigen Gebrauch zu beschränken, bei welchem das Partizip zur Ergänzung eines verbalen Prädicats dient (§ 589 bis 594) und als solches einen wesentlichen Theil der Aussage bildet." Vernaleken leaves no doubt as to his position (p. 502): "Das partizip welches dazu dient einem substantiv etwas als eine nur vorübergehende eigenschaft oder thätigkeit beizulegen, also appositionell steht, und so eine kürzere ausdrucksweise ist für das, was sonst durch neben-sätze mit bindewörtern oder dem relativ ausgedrückt wird, findet sich," etc.; which definition clearly includes adjective (relative) as well as adverbal (conjunctive) clauses. With this O. Erdmann substantially agrees; for, while he does not use the phrase appositive participle, it is clear that his selbständiges Partici pium of the following quotation corresponds to Vernaleken's appositive participle (Syntax d. Spr. Otfrids, p. 214): "Die verbale Natur des Partici piums tritt nicht immer in gleichem Masse hervor. Ich suche bei einem jeden der beiden Participia, welche die ahd. Sprache besitzt, die Belege mit Rücksicht hierauf zu ordnen, und unterscheide drei Abschnitte, je nachdem das Partici pium eine selbständige, von der Handlung des Hauptsatzes unterschiedene Tätigkeit aussagt, oder prädicativ mit dem Verbum zu dem Begriffe einer einzigen Tätigkeit verschmilzt, oder endlich attributiv wie ein Adj. gebräuchlich wird um eine dem Gegenstande, auf welchen es sich bezieht, stetig inwohnende Eigenschaft zu bezeichnen." In his examples Erdmann cites participles that represent adjectival as well as adverbal clauses; as does Mourek, who (p. 33) speaks of the participle "in selbständiger, prädicativer, satzvertretender apposition." With the exception of K. Köhler and of Kühn, who, as already stated,
restrict the appositive participle to adverbial clauses, all¹ the
writers on Old English Syntax named in the bibliography
include under the appositive use of the participle adjectival
as well as adverbial clauses. Some (Conradi, Einenkel,
Flamme, Höser, Kempf, Mohrbutter, Schürmann, Wülffing²)
use the phrase appositive participle; others (Furkert, Hertel,
Planer, Reussner, Seyfarth, Spaeth, Wohlfahrt) speak of the
"eigentliches Particiopium zur Abkürzung eines Satzes"
(Wohlfahrt, p. 39); and others (Koch, Mätzner, March,
Sweet) have no specific designation for the construction.

Another apparently divergent interpretation calls for brief
mention. The standard New High German grammars of
Brandt, von Jagemann, Thomas, and Whitney regularly use
the expression appositive participle to indicate, in the words
of Thomas, "an appositional predicate, which denotes a con-
comitant act or state;" but "such a participle or participial
phrase is," according to Whitney⁶ (§ 357), "used only in the
sense of an adjective clause, and expresses ordinarily an
accompanying circumstance, or describes a state or condition;
it may not be used, as in English, to signify a determining
cause, or otherwise adverbially." But, as a following note
by Whitney and some examples cited by Thomas show, this
statement is somewhat too strong, for in New High German
an appositive participle is occasionally used in place of a
dependent adverbial clause. Moreover, in making the above
remark, Whitney intended to acquaint his reader with New
High German usage and not to give a general definition of a
grammatical term.

To sum up the matter: by a number of eminent gram-
marians the phrase appositive participle is not used as a
distinct category; by others equally eminent it is habitually
used, but in different senses. Of the latter some restrict

¹Except the older grammarians (Hickes, Lye, and Manning), who do
not treat the construction of the appositive participle.
²Wülffing's treatment of the Appositive Participle has not appeared
as yet.
the appositive use to the participle that is equivalent to an adverbial clause, while others make it include adjectival as well as adverbial clauses. The latter usage, though not universal, is becoming general, especially with students of Germanic grammar.

To me the general introduction of this term into our textbooks seems highly desirable, since it would extend to the use of the participle what the student had already learned with reference to the noun. As the statistics show, I include under appositive the participle that is equivalent to an adjectival clause as well as that which is equal to an adverbial clause. The uses of the adverbial appositive participle correspond closely to those of the subordinate adverbial clause, but are so varied as to call for treatment in a separate chapter (II).

III.

The appositive use of the participle is common to the Indo-Germanic languages, but by no means equally common. Greek leads the others, and Latin is far in advance of the Germanic languages. An instructive general treatment of the subject is given by Jolly in his *Zur Lehre vom Participp* and by Delbrück in his *Syntax*. To the works named by Delbrück I may add those of Bolling, Fay, Helm, Köberlin, Milroy, and Tammelin, which throw no little light on the appositive participle in Latin and in Greek. Of works on the appositive participle in the Germanic languages exclusive of English a brief account is given in Chapter v.

In the article just referred to, Jolly maintains that the attributive use of the participle preceded the appositive, and that the appositive preceded the predicative, which latter he considers a younger variation of the appositive. In Anglo-Saxon it is probable, I think, that the attributive use preceded the appositive, the latter growing out of the former when thrust into post-position, either because the noun had several participles modifying it at once or because the participle was itself
modified (see section iv., below). The appositive use of the adjectival participle may have preceded the predicative use of the participle; for the appositive adjectival participle is common in Anglo-Saxon poetry, while, as Pessels (p. 49) has shown, the predicative participle of the progressive tenses is very rare in Anglo-Saxon poetry, though common in the prose. But the appositive use of the verbal participle, at least of the participle governing a direct object, is most probably of later development in English than the predicative use of the present participle; since the progressive tenses are very common in the works of Alfred (nearly 600 exs., according to Pessels, p. 51), while the appositive participle with a direct object is practically unknown to him (only 18 exs., of which 17 are in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle), and does not become frequent until the time of Ælfric (see Statistics). But we must turn from these speculative questions to matters about which a reasonable degree of certainty is possible.

IV.

In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle occurs by far most frequently in the nominative case, as is true also in Lithuanian (Delbrück, p. 490) and in Old High German (Mourek). For the representation of the several cases in Anglo-Saxon see the statistics.

The inflexion of the appositive participle is as follows:—

(1) Present:—The nominative singular of all genders has -ende, with these exceptions: -end occurs three times in the masculine (Boeth. 8. 5, Ælfr. L. S. 282. 5, Ælfr. Hept. (Judges) 4. 22), and once in the feminine (Bede 1 72. 3); by confusion of inflected infinitive with participle, Benet has -enne for -ende four times (95. 11, 114. 10, 61. 7, all masc.; 98. 6, fem.), -an for -and once (29. 11, masc.), and -endre for -ende once (16. 9); Boeth. 1 73. 22 has -inde, m. The GSMN. has
-endes except once, in Benet (109. 2: secgende). The GSF. is
-endre except once, in Ælfric (L. S. xxiii. B. 426: șencende).
The DSMN. is usually -endum (20 exs.), but is -ende occasionally (7 exs.: 1 in Ælfrid, 1 in Benedict, 5 in Ælfric), and
-endan, weak, once (Luke 6. 49). The DSF. is -endre normally (4 exs.), rarely -ende (1 ex.: Ælfric). The ASM. is -endne 21 times,¹ but -ende 28 times (Ælfrid 3, Ælfric 8, A.-S. Hom. &
L. S. 5, Gospeis 6, Poems 6). The ASF. is invariably -ende. The ASN. is -ende except once (Chron. 656 E: cwæðend). The
N. and APMFN. is -ende except twice in Benet (21. 7: be-
cumene for becumende, apm.; 26. 14: stirienda, apn.). The
GP. is -endra (14 exs.) except twice in Benet (69. 1: etenda,
78. 12: utgangendre). The DP. is -endum (30 exs.) except twice (Ælfr. de v. et n. Test 5. 34: farende; A.-S. Hom. &
L. of S. i, 7. 151: ib.).

(2) Preterite:—The NSMN. is -ed (-od,² -ad²; -t³) for weak and -en for strong verbs. The NSF. is regularly
uninflected (64 exs.), being -ed for strong and -en for weak verbs; except twice in Ælfric (Hom. ii, 90²: fortredene,
weak; L. S. xxiii. B. 524: gedrefedu). The GSMN. is once
-es (Chron. 1100 E) and once -ed (Christ 20: forwyrned). The
GSF. is -re (2 exs.). The DSMN. is sometimes inflected
(-um (-an): 11 exs.: EWS. 7, Gosp. 1, Benet 1, Poems 2),
but is oftener not inflected (21 exs.: Ælfric 17, A.-S. Hom.
& L. S. 2, Poems 2). The DSF. is occasionally inflected
(-re: 4 exs.: Ælfrid 1, Ælfric 2, Gosp. 1), but usually not
(14 exs.: Bl. Hom. 1, Ælfric 12, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1). The
ASM. is sometimes inflected (-ne: 47 exs.: Ælfrid 10, Ælfric
17, Gosp. 11, Poems 8, Benet 1), sometimes not (33 exs.:
Ælfrid 1, Ælfric 28, Poems 4). The ASF. is half the time
inflected (-e: 18 exs.: Ælfrid 3, Ælfric 2, A.-S. Hom. & L.
S. 1, Gosp. 1, Wulfst. 1, Poems 10), the other half not (17
exs.: Ælfrid 1, Ælfric 6, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1, Wulfst. 3,

¹In one of these (Benet 107. 7) the text has -enne for -endne.
²These regular variants of -ed- will not be specified hereafter.
Benet 2, Poems 4). The ASN. is uninflected except in Bede 314. 14 \textit{(getrymede, but MS. Ca.: getrymed)}. The N. and APM. is habitually inflected \textit{(-e: over 200 exs., in all the texts)}, but occasionally not (15 exs.: E. W. S. 4, A.-S. \textit{Hom.} & L. S. 1, \textit{Benet} 1, Poems 9). The N. and APF. is invariably inflected \textit{(-e 29 exs.; -u 1 ex.: Benet 92. 15, but see note thereon in statistics}). The N. and APN. is usually inflected \textit{(-e: over 200 exs., in all the texts)}, but occasionally not (15 exs.: \AE lfred 2, \textit{Bened.} 1, Poems 10). The GP. is inflected regularly \textit{(-ra: 13 exs.)} except once in the \textit{Chron.} (656 E: laered). The DP. is inflected four times \textit{(-um)}, and is uninflected three times \textit{(Ælfred 1, \AE lfric 2)}.

It is evident, therefore, that in Anglo-Saxon, especially in Late West Saxon and in the poems, the appositive participle is often not inflected, much oftener indeed than is stated in Sievers's \textit{Angelsächsische Grammatik}.\footnote{The same is true of Old High German (Mourek, p. 19; O. Erdmann, \textit{Syntax d. Spr. Otfrids}, § 355) and of Old Saxon (Pratje, § 156), but not of Gothic (Gering, p. 393).} Again, the inflexion of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is almost invariably strong. In this sentence from the \textit{Blickling Homilies} (107. 20): \textit{Da eaðmodan heortan and ña forhtgenden and ña bifigenden and ña cwacigenden and ña ondvrædenden heora Scyppend, ne forhogað ña næfre God ne ne forsyhN}}, the weak participle, \textit{ondvrædenden}, has an object, and is partly attributive and partly appositive. The sentence illustrates well, I think, the passage of the attributive into the appositive use of the participle; the participle is thrust into post-position because its principal has several participial modifiers, and because the participle itself has a direct object (see section III., above). Sometimes, even in pre-position, the weak participle is strongly appositive, as in \textit{Luke 6. 49}: \textit{He is gelic ñam timbriendan men his hus offer ña eorðan = similis est homini aedificanti domum super terram};—\textit{Bede} \textsuperscript{1} 182. 23: \textit{wæs geworden ñætte ñære seolfan neahle ña brohton (MS. B.:}
gebrohtan) ban ute awunedon = 148. 17: factum est ut... reliquae adlatae foris permanerent; ib. 24. 22; ÆElfr. Hom. ii., 90*2; ÆElfr. L. S. xxvii. 117. Compare, too, Bede¹ 130. 33: (at he seeolde his freond ðone betstan in neede gesetum (MS. B.: gesettan) in gold bebygan = 110. 9: amicum suum optimum in necessitate positum auro uendere. Mourek (p. 46) cites three examples of the appositive participle with weak inflection in Tatian.

In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle regularly follows its principal (post-position), though occasionally it precedes (pre-position: about 100 exs. in all, of which 8 occur in the Poems). Typical illustrations are: Matthew 8. 25: hy awehton hyne, ðus cuedeende = suscitaverunt eum, dicentes; Beowulf 1819: we scælend scegan wylla$feorran cumene; Beow. 721: Com...rinc siðian dreamum bedæled;—Math. 2. 11: gangende into ðam huse, hi gemetton ðat ild mid Marian = intrantes domum invenerunt puerum; Beow. 1581: slæpende bræt folces Denigea fyftyne men. It should be added that it is particularly difficult to distinguish between the post-positive attributive and the appositive participle; but what Mourek (p. 44) says of Tatian seems to me true of Anglo-Saxon in general: most post-positive participles are appositive rather than attributive.
CHAPTER I.

STATISTICS OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

Explanatory Note.

With the exception of the glosses and of a few out-of-prints, I have made a statistical reading of the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature and of the more definitely known Latin originals of the prose texts. For a detailed statement, see the bibliography.

Within the respective groups the works are arranged approximately in their chronological order, except the Minor Poems, which are given in their alphabetic order.

For the light that it throws upon Anglo-Saxon and Germanic syntax, the participle with an object is everywhere separated from the participle without an object. Obviously the distinction is of less importance for the preterite than for the present participle. As applied to the present participle, the term object has its usual signification; as applied to the preterite participle, it includes not only the object in the ordinary acceptation, but also any noun modifier of the participle.

To show the inflection of the participle, each case, number, and gender is cited separately. The abbreviations used to designate these are self-explanatory, as nsn. = nominative, singular, neuter, etc. Cases not cited do not occur. "Other examples" are throughout cited in the alphabetic order of the Anglo-Saxon participles. Compound participles are not separated from the simple ones.

For convenience I have not distinguished Ə and Ɋ, but have uniformly used Ə.
In all of the more definitely known translations the Latin original is given.

I have carefully compared my own statistics with those given in the monographs upon Anglo-Saxon syntax named in the bibliography; and but for the divergent views, already discussed, as to what constitutes an appositive participle, I should give in detail the results of my several collations. However, if the definition given in each treatise is observed, the difference is not great; hence I shall call attention to only the more noteworthy discrepancies disclosed by my collations.

I have tried to make the statistics complete according to the definition given in my Introduction. But, in such a mass of details, occasional omissions and misclassifications are inevitable; I can only hope that they will not prove so numerous or serious as to invalidate this history of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

Finally, I trust that these statistics, which at first doubtless appear unnecessarily detailed, may throw some light on several problems not germane to the purpose of this monograph, such as the contested authorship of the Alfredian works; the Anglo-Saxon vocabulary; the relationship of Anglo-Saxon to Latin syntax aside from the use of the participle, etc.;—some of which I hope to take up at another time.

I. IN THE PROSE WORKS.

BEDE¹ (180).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (107).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (93).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (58):—

NSM. (23):—22. 34: Đæt sum on N. mægðe of deaðe ariðende . . . seægende weæs = 303. 24: Ut quidam . . . a
mortuis resurgens . . . narraverit; 102. 21 is sægd sæt he beoti\(\text{g}\)ende forecwæde = 83. 27: furtur minitans praedixisse. — Other examples: — 8. 19: becumende = 36. 4: perueniens; 24. 3: ib. = 311. 1: ueniens; 270. 4: beoti\(\text{g}\)ende = 211. 10: minitans; 22. 29; bodi\(\text{g}\)ende = 298. 27: praedicans; 12. 11: cumende = 97. 4: ueniens; 8. 16: ib. = 33. 21: nauigans; 8. 28: ib. = 39. 29: reuersus; 114. 21: fleonde = 92. 24: fugiens; 190. 18: forhtigende = 153. 1: tremens; 62. 13: ge- feonde = 47. 22: credens; 442. 26: gnorniende = 314. 14: merens; 154. 3: grimsigende = 128. 6: saeu\(\text{i}\)ns; 204. 17: onhleoniende = 160. 24: incumbs; sorgende = sollicitus, 186. 23 = 150. 29, 268. 7 = 210. 9; sweltende = mori\(\text{n}\)s, 18. 18 = 220. 21 (or attrib. in A.-S.? ) and 286. 6 = 221. 3; ib. = moriturus, 24. 5 = 313. 26; 410. 27: svingende = 297. 23: tacitus; 86. 22\(\text{a}\): voco\(\text{e}\)nde = 60. 28: scien\(\text{s}\); 86. 22\(\text{b}\): (no)weotende = 61. 1: nesciens (I insert no from MSS. Ca. and O.).

NSF. (3) = 332. 2: ðreo & ðrit\(\text{t}\)ig ðæm ærestum heo ðæl\(\text{i}\)ce gefylde in weoruld\(\text{h}\)ade drohti\(\text{n}\)de = 252. 23: XXXIII primos in saeculari habitu nobilissim\(e\) conuersata compleuit. — Other examples: 186. 31: ond\(\text{r}\)æ\(\text{d}\)ende = 151. 10: timens; 18. 20: utgangende = 220. 22: egressura.

NSN. (1) = 86. 10: mid ðy ðæt mood ðis ne weotende aræ\(\text{f}\)ni\(\text{d}\) = 60. 7: quia hanc animum nescientem pertulisse.

NSM. or F. (2) = 240. 26: wol . . . grimsigende = 192. 4: desa\(\text{e}\)u\(\text{e}\)ns; 264. 25: ingongende = 208. 25: egressa (the two preceding nouns are ða stu\(\text{f}\)n and ðone sang. Of ingressa the subject is vox).

NPM. (8) = 252. 2\(\text{a}\)\&\(\text{b}\): se b. and heora la\(\text{e}\)ow\(\text{a}\)s gesfeonde and blissi\(\text{g}\)ende ham hwurfon = 200. 7: sacerdotes, doctor-esque . . . rediere laetantes. — Other examples: — 310. 1: feoh-ti\(\text{d}\)ende = 238. 19: compugnantes; 284. 15: forhti\(\text{e}\)nde = 220. 5: tremefactae; 312. 2: ondettende = 239. 24: professi;

\(\text{1}\) In this text the superior letters distinguish different examples in the same line.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 157

54. 4: sarigende = 32. 33: dolentes; 438. 30: sittende = 312. 11: residens; 186. 9: sorgiende = 150. 13: solliciti.

NPN (1):—158. 27: sider grfeonde coman . . . folc Godes word to gehyranne = 132. 20: confluebant ad audiendum verbum populii gaudentes (or pred.).

NDM. (2):—430. 27: hverfende = 308. 7: reuersi; 424. 20: suigiende = 304. 30: tacentes.

GPN. (1):—104. 18: seó is monigra folca ceapstow of londe and of sæ cumendra = 85. 11: . . . populorum terra marique uenientium.

DSM. (3):—316. 18: swa swa me seolfum frinendum . . .


DSF. (1):—288. 34: swa swa heo to hire liṣgigendre spræce, bæd sæt, etc. = 223. 5: quasi uiiuentem adlocuta, rogavit.


ASM. (3):—228. 19: he eorre ðone cyning liġgende gehran mid sære gyrd = 174. 6: Iratus autem tetigit Regem iacentem.—Other examples:—312. 27b: forðleordenhe = 240. 22: procedentem; 270. 22: liṣgigendre (MS. Ca.: liṣgigendne) = 211. 30: in carne manentem.

ASN. (2):—140. 12: he noht elles dyde . . . ðon sæt cumende Cristes folc ðider of eallum tunum . . . mid god-cundre lare timbrede = 115. 4: nil aliud aget quam confluentem eo . . . plebem C . . . verbo instruere; 412. 13: liȝgende = 298. 9: iacentem.

APM. (2):—276. 12: licade us efencuman æfter sæewe arwyrdra rehta smeagende bi sæm, etc. = 215. 1: placuit conuenire nos . . . tractatus de, etc.; 10. 29: hwylc wræc uhi forhogiende æfterfyligde = 81. 8: quaeue illos spermentes
ultio secuta est. [Miller and Smith have *him forhogiende*, in which case *forhogiende* would be a “crude” dative plural; but it seems preferable to read *hi forhogiende*, the variant given by Miller and Schipper, which corresponds better with the Latin. Though Miller apparently so translates, *him* could scarcely be the object of *forhogiende*, since according to Wiilfing (p. 186) this verb governs the accusative only.]

APF. (2):—426. 33a, b: ἡ geseah ic menigo Ἑκα wergra gasta v. monna sawla grornende & heosende teon & laédan on = 306. 13a, b: considero turbam malignorum spirituum, quae quinque animas hominum merentes heiulantesque . . . trahebat.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually in immediate connection with an appositive participle (5):—

NSM. (3):—160. 15: he ἡ gifeonde Ἑκα fum rehte and salede = 135. 28: Cuncta . . . mox hauperibus . . . erogare gaudebat (cf. *gfeito = gaudentes* in 158. 27 = 132. 20, etc.).—Other examples:—88. 17a, b: goiende ἡ geomriende cwæð = 61. 25: gemebat dicens.


3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (20):—

NSM. (16):—22. 17a, b: ἂ ὑπὸ τὸ πρεσβύτερον . . . gebiddende ἡ bletsigende fram deaðe gecyrde = 289. 4a, d: orando ac benedicendo a morte reuocauerit.—Other examples:—348. 25: bebeodende = 262. 18: commendando; 270. 34: dwolende = 212. 11: errando; 346. 3: eodorcende = 260. 31: ruminando; 246. 25b: gongende = 195. 21b: incedendo; gebiddende = orando, 8. 23b = 37. 5, 12. 10 = 93. 26, 16. 2 = 158. 27, 20. 29 = 271. 3, 22. 7b = 281. 2, 22. 11 = 285. 1, 22. 14 = 288. 1; *ib. = benedicendo*, 22. 9
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 159

= 282. 30; 246. 25*: ridende = 195. 21*: equitando; 348. 24: segniende = 262. 17: signando.

NSF. (2):—72. 3* & b: ðætte oft [cirice is to be supplied from earlier part of sentence] ðæt widerworde yfel abeorende and ældend (MS. O.: yldende) beweræ = 51. 29, 30: ut saepe malum quod aduersatur portando et dissimulando compescat.

NPM. (1):—72. 9: ða ðe him ne ondædað weotonde syngian = 52. 1: qui non metunt sciendo peccare.

ASM. (1):—22. 16*: ðæt he his preosta ænne of horse fallende & gebrysedne gelice gebiddende & blestigende fram deæhe gecyrde = 289. 4*: Ut clericum suum cadendo contritum, aeque orando ac benedicendo a mente renocauerit.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):

NSM. (1):—204. 3: he . . . on ðære styðe stondende forðerde = 160. 5: . . . adclinis destinae . . . spiritum, uitae exhalaret ultimum.

NPM. (1):—54. 5: sume forhtiende on eðle gebidon = 33. 1: alii perstantes in patria trepidi . . . agebant.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

NSM. (1):—142. 8: sægde he ðæt he hine cneoht weosende geawæ = 116. 12: et se in pueritia vidisse testabatur. [hine here stands for here, 'sanctuary.'—Cf. Bede 188. 1: in ðam mynstre . . . in ðam cneohtwesendum ðis hælo wundor geworden wæs = 151. 15: in eodem monasterio . . . in quo tune pueru factum erat hoc miraculum sanitatis, in which cneoht-wesendum is perhaps a substantive. Cf. further Widsið 39; Beow. 46, 372, 535, 1187.]

6. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverb (2):

NSM. (1):—38. 1: ða . . . he ealle ða witu . . . gedyldelice and gefende for Drihtne abær and aræfnde = 20. 1: Qui . . . patienter hæc pro Domino immo gaudenter ferebat. [Perhaps it is better to consider gefende here as a pure adverb.]
NPM. (1):—310. 30: Ðas we sendon arfæstlice fyligende & rihtwulfdriende = 239. 23: Hos itaque sequentes nos pie atque orthodoxe. [Pure adverb? Cf. 310. 25: we wæron smeagende rehtne geleasan & rehtwulfdriende = 239. 17: fidem rectam & orthodoxam exposuimus, where rehtwulfdriende is an adjective.]

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin future infinitive (2):—

NPM. (2):—266. 32⁷: æfter seofon dagum heo eft hweor-fende & cumende me gehehton; j me ðonne mid him lædan woldon = 209. 34: se redituros, ac me secum adducturos esse promiserunt.

8. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (3):—

NSM. (1):—464. 16: gefeonde ða heofonlican rico gestah & gesohht = 330. 1: no Latin correspondent.

NPM. (1):—100. 12: ða ondetton eac Brettas scomiende ðæt heo ongeton = 82. 14: Tum Brettones confitentur quidem intellexisse se.

ASM. (1):—214. 32: ða gegreopon ða unclænan gastas ærne of ðam monnum ðe heo in ðæm fyre bærond and ðræston þ wurpon swa beornendne on hine & he gehran his sculdra þ his ceacan þ hine swa forþærond = 166. 26: arripientes inmundi spiritus unum de eis, quos in ignibus torrebant, iactaverunt in eum, et contingentes humerum maxillamque eius incenderunt.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (14).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (14):—

NSM. (8):—378. 25: he mid ðy mæstan gewinne mid his cryce hine wreðigende ham becom [MS. B.: hine gewræðede & ham becom] = 278. 15: maximo cum labore baculo innitens domum peruenit. Cf. 380. 7: his leomo mid his cryce wreðigende code in cyrican [MS. B.: gewræðede &
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 161

eode] = 278. 27: artus baculo sustentans intrait ecclesiam.—
14. 4: Dæt se ylea cyning biddende . . . biscope onfeng
Aidanum on naman gehatenne = 131. 4: Ut . . . rex postu-
lans antistitem . . . acceperit Aidanum. Cf. 10. 12: andsware
biddende onfeng = 48. 2: responsa petens acceperit.—10. 7:
and swa . . . G. word bodigende on Cent eode = 44. 25: sic . . .
Cantiam praedicaturus intrauerit.—352. 14: sætte . . .
ongan, swa he eft for intingan sære godcundan lufan lust-
fulliende sam ecum medium fæstlice forfæste = 264. 12:
quod . . . iam causa diuini amoris delectatus praemiis inde-
fessus agebat.—450. 20: mid δy he wæs godre gleaunsee
enih j he ða yldo mid ðeawum oferstigende [MS. B.: wæs
oberstigende] & he swa gemetfæstlice & swa ymsceawiendlice
hine sylfne on callum ðingum beheold ðæt = 322. 27: atque
aetatem moribus transiens, ita . . . gereret ut (or pred.?).—
16. 8: Dæt se . . . b. onfonde . . . sume stowe mynster on to
timbrianne, & ða mid halgum gebedum & fæstenum Drihtne
gehalgod = 174. 22: Ut idem episcopus locum . . . accipiens
. . . Domino consecraverit.

NPM. (3):—312. 23 & b: we wuldriaθ usserne D. swa swa
θas wuldredon . . . noht toeteconden θoθe onweg atoones =
240. 18 & b: glorificamus D. sicut . . . nihil addentes uel sub-
trahentes.—312. 25: ða θe heo onfegon we eac swelce onfΘ
. . . wuldrιende God Fæder, etc. = 240. 20: suscepimus,
glorificantes Deum, etc.

GSN. (1):—426. 30: gehled & ceahetunge swa swa unge-
læredes folces & biosmriendes gehæftum heora feound =
306. 10: cachinum crepitantem quasi uulgi indocti captis
hostibus insultantis.

APM. (2):—54. 31: sende munecas mid hine Drihten
ondređende = 42. 21: misit monachos timentes Dominum.—
358. 10: Ac forðon ðe he ne wolde ðy ærran geare gehyran
ðone arwyrθan fæder Eegberht, ðæt he Scoittas hine noht
secðsenede ne afuhte = 267. 7: sed quoniam noluerat audire
E., ne Scottiam nil se ledetem impugnaret.
Note.—In Bede 1 430. 18 (in sæere ic eac swylec ᵖa sweatestan stæfne geherde Godes lof singendra = 307. 31: in qua etiam uoceem cantantium dulcissimam audii) we have a substantivized participle with an object.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (73).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (60).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (47):


NSN. (1):—78. 15: wiif in blodes flownesse geseted = 52. 1: in fluxu posita; ib. 78. 28 = 56. 5.

NS. M. or N. (1):—150. 13: ... væl & cælic ... gehalgad = 126. 9: calicem ... consecratum.

NS. N. or F. (1):—262. 22: væl & moncowild gesended = 207. 21: clades missa.

NPM. (7):—164. 7: oððæt heo styccemælum aafedde ... beboda onfon meahte (MS. Ca.: mihten) = 137. 17:

NPN. (2):—140. 3: *waron eac gefulwade oðer his bearn of A. ðære cwene acende = 114. 25: Baptizati sunt alii liberi eius de A. *progeniti.—182. 23: wæs geworden ðætte ðære seolfan neahte ða *brohtan* (MS. B.: *gebrohtan*) ban ute awunedon = 148. 17: factum est ut ... reliquiae *adlatae* foris permanerent (may be attrib.).

DSF. (1):—320. 7: cwomon heo to sumre ceastre geheorenre noht for ðonon = 245. 1: uenerunt ad ciuitatulam quondam *desolatam*, non procul inde sitam.

DSN. (1):—338. 32: in oðrum mynystre fyrr *gesettum = 257. 2: in alio longius posito monasterio.

ASM. (8):—312. 27a: we eac swelece onfoð, wuldriende God Fører & his Sunu ðone acennedan of Fører acennedne ær worulde = 240. 21: ... glorificantes Deum & filium eius unigenitum ex Patre *generatum.—Other examples:—


ASF. (3):—58. 25a–b: Bærôn ... anlicnesse Dríhtnes Hælendes on brede afoxgde and awritene = 46. 2: *ferentes ... imaginem ... in tabula depictam;* 484. 28: *geðydde = 359. 29: adiectum.

ASN. (3):—122. 12: Hæfle he ... twiege handseax *geættred = 99. 3: qui habebat sicam bicipitem toxicatam.—Other examples:—106. 7: *gehalgod = 86. 12: dedicatum;* 314. 14: *priuilegium of ðære apostolican aldorlicnesse *getrymede* (MS. Ca.: *getrymed) = 241. 14: ... epistulam priuilegii
ex auctoritate apostolica firmatam (getrymede due to close following of firmatam?).

APM. (1):—296. 7: Gesead he . . . ðrywapnedmen to him cuman mid beorhtum hræglum *gegyred* = 226. 21: Uidit enim . . . tres ad se uenisse uiros claro *indutos* habitu.


NSN. (1):—272. 6: Is ofer his byrgenne stowe treowgworca mid gelicenesse medmicles huses geworht, mid hrægle *gegyrved* = 212. 17: Est autem locus idem sepuleri tumba lignea in modum domunculi facta *co-opertus*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (3):

NSM. (3):—342. 4a&amp;b: In . . . mynstre wæs sum broðor syndriglice mid godeondre gife gemæred */geweorðad* = 258. 28: In m. fuit frater quidam diuina gratia specialiter *insignis*; 88. 25: *geneded* = 62. 2: *invitus*.


NSM. (1):—16. 15: *Dæt* E. se halga wer of Angelcynnes cynne *acenned* munuclif wæs lædende on Hibernia = 191. 26: Ut E., uir sanctus *de natione Anglorum*, monachicam in H. uitam duxerit.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (8):

NSM. (5):—20. 28: *Dæt* se wer on ancerlife geseted . . . gelædde = 271. 3: Ut idem in uita anachoretica . . . produxerit. *Ib.*: 22. 7* = 281. 2. [Cf. *geseted* = *positus* in 20. 27 = 268. 20, 444. 5 = 314. 21.]—Other examples:—114. 14: *geswenced* & werig [MSS. B. & C.: wæs] = 92. 17; 258. 28: *haten* (‘called’) = 205. 15; 434. 24: *haten* (‘called’) = 310. 6.

ASM. (1):—14. 5: *Dæt* se ylca cyning biddende . . . biscope (MS. B.: bysceop) onfeng Aidanum on naman *gehatenne* = 131. 4: Ut idem rex postulans antistitem . . . acceperit Aidanum. [Cf. 158. 12: him bispoc sendon, Aidan
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 165

wæs haten = 131. 15: acceptit namque pontificem Aedanum.

APM. (1):—328. 7: ða stafas mid him awritene hæfde (or pred.?) = 250. 28: no Latin equivalent. [MS. B. omits awritene.]

APN. (1):—108. 17: ða ðing ðe ðær gedemed wærōn ... wrat and festnade ond eft hwærft to B. ða mid hine on Ongolcricum to healdenne awriten brohte = 88. 22 (or pred.?).

II. With an Object (13).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (12):—

NSM. (3):—214. 11: eft onlysed ðy lichoman byrneð = 166. 4: ita solutus corpore ardebit.—Other examples:—

478. 1: eldo fornumen = 349. 29: consumtus aetate; 440. 20: witum underseoded = 313. 3: pænis subditus.

NSF. (1):—332. 16: Forðon ðe ... Hereswīð ... regollicum ðeodsceipum underseoded, baad ðone ecan sige = 253. 10: Nam H. ... regularibus subdita disciplinis ex-pectabat.

GSF. (1):—172. 26: ðisse fæmnan Gode gehalgodre monige weorc ... gewuniasð ... sægd beon = 143. 1: Huius autem virginiis Deo dicołae solent, etc.

GPF. (1):—284. 32: in ðara fænnena mynstre Gode gehalgodra = 220. 26: in urigimum Deo dedicatarum cella.

DSM. (1):—16. 12: Se cyning for ðam sige sealdan him ... sealdæ, etc. = 129. 11: pro adepta victoria ... dederit.

DPF. (1):—14. 15: be Ê. and A. Gode gehalgedum fænnnum = 142. 2: de Ê. and Æ., sacratis Deo uriginibus.

DPN. (1):—24. 22: mid him ðam underseoddum myn-strum = 346. 14: cum subjectis sibi monasteriis (or attrīb.?).

ASF. (1):—232. 2: ne ðonne nemne medmicel dæl hlafes and an henne æg mid lītle meolc wætre gemengede he onfeng = 175. 30: cum paruo lacte aqua mixto percipiebat.

ASN. (1):—344. 28: ðy betstan leoðe geglenged him asong
and ageaf, sæt him beboden wæs = 260. 24: optimo carmine, quod iubebatur, conpositum reddidit.

APN. (1):—212. 23: Gesæah he eac feower fyr onæled on sære lyfte noht micle fæce betweoh him toseeaden = 165. 20: . . . quatuor ignes . . . non multo . . . spatio distant.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerundive (1):

NSF. (1):—236. 29: Æa eode seo . . . dohtor . . . Gode gehalgod in sæt mynster = 179. 1: Intrauit filia Deo dedicanda monasterium.

BOETHIUS¹ (27).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (17).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (17).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

NSM. (1):—14. 16: se broc, sæah he swife of his rihtryne, Æonne¹ sær micel stan wealwende of sæm heohan munte oninnan fealð & hine todælð & him his rihtrynes wiðstent = 23. 16: Quique uagatur montibus altis deflus amnis, sæpe resistit rupe soluti obice saxi.

NSF. (1):—81. 27: Swa ðu gesceope ða saule ðæt hio sceoldæ ealne weg hwearfæan on hire selfre, swa swa eall ðæs rodor hwerfð, oððe swa swa swa hweol onhwerfð, smeogende ymb hire sceoppæn oððe ymbe hi selfe = 71. 13: Tu triplicis medium naturae cuncta moventem conectens animam per consona membra resoluis. Quae cum secta duos motum glomerait in orbes, in semet reditura meat mentemque profundam circuit et simili convertit imagine cælum.

2. The A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which verb is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):

¹I have expanded the contractions of this text.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 167

NPM. (1) :—108. 14: irnað hidres ðidres dwoligende under ðæm hrofe callra gesceafa = 93. 78: sed circa ipsam rerum summam uestecemque deficiunt nec in eo miseris contingit effectus quod solum dies noctesque moliuntur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (2):

NSM. (2):—8. 8¹: wepende & gisciende = 3. 2: fletibus.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds loosely to a Latin substantive in the nominative (1):

NPM. (1):—74. 31: dwoliende = 67. 9: error etc.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):

NSM. (2):—8. 15: geomriende asungen hæfde = 4. 2: querimoniam laerimabilem; 8. 6: ic sceal nu heofriende singan = 3. 1: flebilis.

6. The A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (9):

NSM. (9):—3. 7: Hu B. hine singende gebæd; singende ecwæð: 9. 29, 46. 2, 48. 22, 60. 27, 71. 4, 8. 5 (singend—), 73. 22 (singingde—); 17. 14: sorgiende anforlete.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (10).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (10).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (3):

GPM. and N. (2):—11. 27, 28¹: Ne me na ne lyst mid glase geworhtra (or attrib.?) waga ne heahsetla mid golde & mid gimmum gerenodra = 19. 21: . . . comptos ebose ce uitro parietes.

ASN. (1):—133. 22: God seleð ægðer ge good ge yfel gemenged = 112. 140: mixta.

NS. F. or N. (1):—91. 8: wuht . . . se ungened lyste forweordan = 78. 45: nullis cogentibus.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb (1):

NSM. (1):—46. 27: se nama mid feaum stafum awritten = 47. 17: signat nomen literis.


NP. F. or N. (1):—100. 22: gesceafa hiora agnum willum ungenedde him wseren underSiodde = 83. 47: voluntaria sponte.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (4):

NSN. (1):—131. 27: gemenged = 111. 96 (cf. 133. 22: gemenged = 112. 140: mixta).

NPM. (2):—30. 25, 26: ßonne sint hi ße pliolicran & geswinefulran hafd ßonne naefd.

GPF. (1):—11. 28: boca mid golde awrittenra = 19. 21 (an ap. ptc. occurs in the Latin of this sentence, but not corresponding to awrittenra).

II. With an Object (0).

No example.

Gregory1 (82).

A. The Present Participle (58).

I. Without an Object. (56).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (9):

NSM. (2):—261. 11: Se ilca suigende gedafode swingellan = 196b: tacitus flagella toleravit; 225. 22; ßeahtigende = 170b: retractantes.

1In this text a refers to the top and b to the bottom of the page.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 169

NSN. (1):—431. 18: Swa bið sæt mod slæpende gewundad swa hit ne gefret, ñonne etc. = 356*: Mens quippe a cura suae sollicitudinis dormiens verberatur et non dolet, quia etc.

NPM. (3):—405. 31: Ac sæ hie wendon hiera bæc to him, sæ hi ofermodgiende his gebod förhögdon = 326*: superbiens ejus jussa contemsit.—Other examples:—259. 19: suigende = 196*: superbiens ejus. Omit examples:—110. 9: ñørhwuniende = 126*: inhaerentes.

DSM. (2):—93. 9: Hit is gecueden sæt se sacerd scolde sweltan, gif se sweg nære of him gehiered ge inngongendum ge utgongendum = 62b: Sacerdos namque ingrediens vel egrediens moritur, se de eo sonitus non auditur.

ASM. (1):—399. 14: Sio Segor gehælde Loth fleondne = 318*: Segor civitas, quae fugientem salvet infirmum.

Note.—In 159. 18 (sæt hi ñonne gehieran ñreagende of ñæs lariowes muðe hu micle byrðenne hie habbað on hiera scyldum = 116*: ut cum culpa ab auctore non cognoscitur, quanti sit ponderis, ab increpantis ore sentiatur) ñreagende, as Cosijn suggests (vol. 2, p. 97), is doubtless used adverbially. We should expect the genitive, ñreagendes, to agree with lariowes. Compare the use of ñreatigende in 315. 23, etc.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb either is subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle that has been turned into an A.-S. finite verb (6):

NSM. (5):—93. 6: Hit is awritten sæt he scolde inngongende & utgongende beforan Gode to ñam halignessum beon gehiered his sueg, ñylæs he swulte = 62b: Scriptum quippe est: “Ut audiatur sonitus, quando ingreditur et egreditur sanctuarium in conspectu Domini, et non moriatur.”—151. 24: he hit him ñéah suigende gesæde = 110*: et hoc ipsum tamen, quia tacerit, dixit. [Just before this, however, occurs tacens et quasi non videns].—369. 4: siofgende cwæð = 286*: queritur dicens.—315. 23: ñreatigende cwæð = 244*: redarguit dicens.

NPM. (1):—215. 7: unwillende = 162*: quae non appetur.
3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (18):

NSM. (13):—101. 14: & eft hine selfe ofdune 
astig-gende he cuðe gemetgian his hieremo[n]num = 70a: quia
noverat eumdem se auditoribus condescendendo temperare.—
379. 19: ðætte he eac cigende & lærende ődre ðider tio &
læsige ðider he getogen bið = 294b: Ut . . . illuc etiam
clamando alios quo ipse rapitur trahat.—Other examples:—
27. 21: gedœiende = 8a: permittendo ; 127. 6: ollicende =
88b: demulcendo ; 49. 20 and 81. 10: sprecende = 26b and
54a: loquendo ; 123. 21: stirende = 86a: corrigendo ; 127. 7:
ʒreatigende = 88b: terrendo ; 383. 8: ib. = 298a: incre-
pando ; 295. 12 and 297. 15: wandigende = 222b and 224b:
parcendo ; 81. 11: wyrœnende = 54a: ostendendo.

NSN. (1):—433. 6: ðæt is ðæt hit [= mod] ða gedonan
unðeawas swincende gebete, & ða ungedonan foreðœncelice
becierre = 358a: ut et praesentia laborando subjiciat, et
contra futura certamina prospiciendo convalescat.

NPM. (4):—439. 15: ðæt hi ongiten feallende ðæt hie
ær hiora agnes ðonces ne stodon = 364a: et cadendo discunt
non fuisse proprium quod steterunt.—Other examples:—91.
22: hlydende = 62a: clamando ; 345. 22: ofermodgiende =
266b: superbiendo ; 101. 21: upsceawende = 70a: contem-
plando.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
gerund in the genitive (1):—

NPM. (1):—191. 4: ðæt hie wel liben[de] gode bisene
astellen ðæm ðe him underðiedde sien = 142a: discant . . .
isti quomodo etiam commissis sibi exempla bene vivendi
exterius praebant.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
prepositional phrase (7):—

NSM. (4):—397. 27, 28: Ne cwæðo ic no ðæt ðæt ic ær
cwæð beboendende, ac lærende & gedœigende = 316a: Hoc
autem dico secundum indulgentiam non secundum imperium;
253. 6: geomríende = 192a: in dolore.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 171

NSN. (1):—417. 11: geðafigende = 338b: *ex deliberatione.
NPM. (2):—415. 6: Wuton cuman ær his dome andet-
tende (or pred.?) = 336*: Praeveniamus faciem Domini in
confessione; 123. 16: weaxænde = 286*: ad interitum.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
substantive in the ablative of manner or of means (6):

NSM. (4):—415. 18: & he ða hi swa unrote oleccende
to him geloccode = 336b: tristemque blanditiis delinivit.—
Other examples:—53. 16: egesiende = 30*: terroribus; 53.
16: hiertende = 30*: favoribus; 379. 23: hreowsigende =
294b: magna voce penitentiae.

NPM. (2):—185. 7: is cynn ðætte we for hira modes hælo
olicende hi on smylnses gebringen mid ure spræce = 138a:
dignum est, ut ad salutem mentis quasi dulcine citharae
locutionis nostrae tranquilitate revocetur; 117. 17: suigende
= 82a: tacita cognitione.

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
adverb (1):—

NPM. (1):—381. 25: ... Godes ðegnas, ða ðe unwandi-
ende ðara scyldegena gyltas ofslogen = 296b: qui delinquen-
tium scelera incunctanter ferirent (or pure adverb?).

8. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
infinitive (3):—

NSM. (2):—403. 6: Forðæm se ðe hine selfne maran
godes behæt, & ðonne forlet ða maran god, & went hine to
ðæm læssum, ðonne þið hit swutol ðæt he þið fromlociende
oferswïðed = 322a*: Iui igitur fortiori studio intenderat, retro
convincitur respicere, si relictis amplioribus bonis adminima
retorquetur.—61. 3: Se læce þið micles to beald & to scom-
leas ðe gæð æfter oðra monna husum læcnigende (or pred.?),
& heefð on his agnum nebbe opene wunde unlacenode = 36a*:
Si ergo adhuc in ejus opere passiones vivunt, qua præsumtione
percussum mederi proprat, qui in facie vulnus portat?

NPM. (1):—297. 4: Sua, ðonne ðonne hatheortan hie
mid nane foreðonce nyllað gestillan, ac sua wedende folgiað
hwam sua sua Assael dyde Æfnere, & næfre nyllað gesuican,
Sonne is micel ṣearf etc. = 224*: Sed cum iracundi nulla consideratione se mitigant, et quasi Asael persequi et insanire non cessant; necesse est etc.


NSM. (1):—207. 22: Forðæm he spræc ᵈṠs word ᵈṠ he wolde ᵈSara scamleasna sceylde telende geopenian = 156*: ut et illorum culpas increpatio dura detegeret.

10. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (3):

NSM. (3):—185. 9: æresṠ mon sceal sprecan ascierde.—
153. 5: Ac ᵈSonne se lareow ieldende secṠ ᵈSone timan etc.—
39. 16: suigende he cwæd.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (2).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):

NSM. (1):—99. 4: & ᵈSætte hie [Cotton MS.: he] sua healierra ñinga wilningende ne forsio his niehstan untrume & sceyldige = 68*: ne aut alta petens proximorum infirma despiciat.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (1):

NPM. (1):—171. 13: ᵈSæt is ᵈSonne ᵈSæt mon ᵈSa earce bere on ᵈSæm saglum, ᵈSætte ᵈSa godan lareowas ᵈSa halgan gesommenunge levende ᵈSa niwan & ᵈSa ungeleaffullan mod mid hire lare gelæde [sic!] to ryhtum geleafan = 126*: Vectibus quippe aream portare, est bonis doctoribus sanctam Ecclesiam ad rudes infidelium mentes praedicando deducere. [Cotton MS. has boeṠ levende.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (24).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (23).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (11):—
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 173

NSM. (4):—443. 22: Ac ða he swa gebreged on eorðan feoll, & acsode, & cwað etc. = 370.\(^b\) Nam cum prostratus, requiret, dicens.—Other examples:—135. 23: gehefegad and ofersuïd = 96\(^b\): victam; 51. 1: undcensod = 26\(^b\): non purgatus.

NPF. (1):—153. 1: Ac monige scylda openlice witene boð to forberanne = 110\(^a\): Nonnulla autem vel aperte cognita, mature toleranda sunt.

NPN. (2):—245. 8: Hwæt getæniað ðonne ða truman ceastra butan hwurfulu mod, getrymedu and ymbrymedu mid lytelicre ladunge? = 184\(^a\): Quod enim per civitates munitas expirmitur, nisi suspectae mentes et fallaci semper defensione circumdatae?

DPM. or N. (1):—155. 10: ðonne he ongiet be sumum ðingum ðæðæ ðeawum utanne ætievædum eall ðæt hie innan ðenceað = 112\(^a\): qui discussis quibusdam signis exterius apparentibus ita corda subditorum penetrat ut etc.

ASM. (2):—383. 32: gif mon on niwne we[a]ll unadru-godne & unastiðodne micelne hrof & hefigne onsett, ðonne etc. = 300\(^a\): quod structuris recentibus needum solidatis si tignorum pondus superponitur etc.

ASN. (1):—403. 20: ðæt hi hit huru tobrocen gebeten = 322\(^b\): bona . . . saltem scissa resarciant.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (2):—

NPM. (1):—227. 25: ðe . . . gefeohtað & eft innan hira burgum fæste belocene ðurh hiera giemeliste hie lætað gebindan = 172\(^b\): qui victores sunt, sed per negligentiam postmodum intra urbis claustra capiuntur.

NPF. (1):—407. 30: forðæm gif hie geðenceað ðara gesæða ðe him ungeendode æft ðæm geswincum becum man sculon = 328\(^a\): Si enim attendatur felicitas quae sine transitu attingitur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative of manner or of cause (1):—
NPM. (1):—435. 2: gif hi førlecor syngoden unbedøhte = 360a: si in his sola præcipitacione cecidissent.


NPM. (1):—109. 23: Hie sculon förðy ofdræd[de] . . . liegean astreahte etc. = 76a: quia videlicet etc. ex ea debent etiam formidini jacere substrati.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverb (2):

NPM. (2):—117. 23: . . . sua . . . sua we for monnum orsorglicor ungewitnode syngiað = 82a: Tanto . . . quanto apud homines inulte peccamus.—137. 19: Ungeniedde, mid eowrum agenum willan, ge sculon ðencean = 98b: non coacte, sed spontanee etc. [Or are both pure adverbs?]

6. An A.-S. appositive participle loosely corresponds to a Latin substantive in the nominative (2):

NPM. (2):—302. 10: unmidlode and ðundene = 228b: effrenatio etc.

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):

NSM. (2):—227. 21: & he ðonne sua gebunden . . . sargað etc. = 172b: ut plerumque vir patiens . . . captivus crube-scat; 317. 12: ungeðingod = 244b: repentina (or pure adverb?).

8. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):

NPM. (1):—105. 1: . . . cleenran ðonne hie . . . væren, mid ðæm tearum ðara gebeda ðæwægen.

DPF. (1):—343. 8: æhtum gereafodu[m].

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the accusative (1):

ASM. (1):—197. 20: hit no gedæfenlic nære ðæt hie slogon Gode gehalgodne kyning = 148a: fregit eos responsi-
onibus, quia manum mittere in Christum Domini non deberet (or attrib.?).

**Orosius** (21).

A.—The Present Participle (16).

I. Without an Object (14).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (4):—

NSM. (2):—200. 32: he him *wepende* (wære bene) getygdaðe, for *ðon* *ðe* (he) seolde Italiam forlætæn = 201. 30: *flens* reliquit Italiam; 240. 9: *wepende* mænde *ða* unære = 241. 8: *deplorans* injurias.

NSF. (2):—12. 32, 33: & *돈не forð *돈nan west *irrende* heo tolið on twa ymb an igland *ðe* mon hæt Meroen, & *донан* norð *bugende* ut on *돈е* Wendelsæ = 13. 20, 22: deinde diu ad occasum *profuens*, faciensque insulam nomine Meroen in medio sui: novissime ad septentrionem *inflexus* . . . plana *Ægypti* rigat.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive (2):—

NSM. or N. (2):—166. 17, 18: *wægðer* ge *he*(self) *wepende* hamweard for, ge *ðæt* folc *ðæt* him ongean com, call hit him *wepende* hamweard folgdæ = 167. 8: . . . ad cujus conspectum *plangentium* junguntur agmina.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—

NSM. (2):—294. 11: *hiene siððan* mid rapum be *ðæm* sweoran up aheng, gelicost *ðæm* *ðe* he hiene self(ne) *unwitende* hæfdæ awierged = 295. 8: strangulatus, atque ut *voluntariam* sibi conscivisse mortem putaretur, laqueo suspensus est (notice the mistranslation); 40. 18: *fleonde* = 41. 16: *profugum*.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (6):—
II. With an Object (2).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):

   NPM. (1):—32. 21: geforan Roðum ðæt igland, wihniende ðæt hi ælceum gewinne ðæflogen hæfdon = 33. 19: credentes quod se . . . abstraherent, Rhodum insulam . . . ceperunt.  

2. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (1):

   NSM. (1):—52. 27: sona ðæs folces ðone mæstan ðæl fleonde mid ealle forlædde [dæl seems to be the object of forlædde as well as of fleonde].

B.—The Preterite Participle (5).

I. Without an Object (5).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

   NPF. (1):—14. 18: ðæs landes is xliii [sic] ðeoda, wide tosetene for unwæstmbærnesse ðæs londes = 15. 20: gentes sunt quadraginta duae, propter terrarum infæcundam diffusionem late oberrantes.  

   ASN. (1):—168. 14: swa he hit him eft ham bebead on anum brede avritten etc. = 169. 10: . . . per tabellas scriptas etc.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

   DPF. & M. (1):—88. 13: Æfter ðæm wæs an ger full ðæt ofer eall Romana rice seoeorðæ wæs cwaciende & berstende & ælce dæge mon com unarimedlice oft to (ðæm) senatum, &
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 177

him sædon from burgum & from tunum on eorðan besunnen = 89. 10: Per totum fere annum tam crebri, tamque etiam graves in Italia terrae-motus fuerunt, ut de innumeris quassationibus ac ruinis villarum oppidorumque assiduis Roma nuntiis fatigaretur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):

NPM. (2):—92. 30: bewopene; 250. 14: ungeniedde.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

PSALMS, THORPE (24).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (20).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (7).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):

NSM. (1):—17. 3: herigende ic clypige to ðe, Drihten = laudans invocabo Dominum.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

NSM. (1):—50 Int. (= Introduction): hreowsiende = Bruce 93: Sub occasione pœnitentiae.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the genitive (2):

NSM. (2):—34 Int.\(^1\&^2\): ma witgiende, Șonne wyrgende ðe wilniende = Bruce 86: non malevolentia optandi, sed praescientia prophetandi.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (1):

NSM. (1):—34 Int.\(^3\): wyrgende = Bruce 86: malevolentia.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):

NSM. (2):—30 Int.: gebiddende to; 5. 7: hopiende to.
II. With an Object (13).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin absolute clause (1):

NSM. (1):—38 Int.: _seofigende_ = Bruce 87: _Angentibus_...


NSM. (1):—34 Int.: _siofigende_ = Bruce 85: _Occasione aerumnarum suarum_.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (11):


B.—The Preterite Participle (4).

I. Without an Object (4).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

APF. (2):—44. 15: _beslepte_ and _gegyrede_ = _circumamicta_.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

ASN. (1):—20. 3: _astæned_ = _de lapide_.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):

DSN. (1):—41 Int.: _folce_ _gehaeftum_ etc. = Bruce 89: _populus captivus_ etc.

II. With an Object (0).

No example.
THE CHRONICLE* (46).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (13).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (9).

NSM. (2):—1097 Eₐᵇ (p. 233ᵇ): Da uppon sancte Michaels maessan iii N° October ætywde an selcuð steorra on æfen scynende & soma to setle gangende (or pred.).

NPM. (7):—1069 Dₐᵇ, ᵇ (p. 204ᵐ): & heom com særtogenes Eadgar cild & Waldæeof eorl & Mærleswegen & Gospatric eorl mid Nordymbrum & ealle sæ land leoden ridende & gangende (or both pred.) mid umætan here swiðe fængendende & swa calle ærrædllice to Eofewirc foron.—1075 Dₐᵇ (p. 210ᵐ): ac he sylf & his ferestan menn ferdon eft ongean to Scotlande, sume hreowlice on fotan gangende & sume earmlice ridende (or both pred.).—1123 E (p. 251ˡ): & riden sær spreecende (or pred.). Da asex dune se biskop etc.—1086 Eᵃ (p. 218ᵇ): & tweegen halige menn sæ hyrsu-medon Gode on ancersettle wunende sær wæron forbearnde.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—1087 E (p. 223ᵐ): Das sæing geséconom se arwur sæ biskop Wlstan wearð swiðe gedræad on his mode.

NPM. (1):—1083 E: & sume crupon under & gyrne cleopedon to Gode, his mitlæ biddende.

ASN. (2):—656 Eᵇ (p. 33ᵇ): seo papa seonde sæ his writ, Æus cwæðend: Ic Uitalianus papa etc.—Cf. 675 E (p. 35ᵇ): And seo papa seonde sæ his gewrite to Englalande, Æus cwæðende.

Note: Latin Participles in The Chronicle.—Several instances of a Latin appositive participle occur in the Chronicle but are not translated into A.-S.: 431 E: apparens; 625 E: constans.

*The superior letters outside the parenthesis distinguish the several examples of the same year; those inside the parenthesis are explained by Plummer.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (33).

1. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (33).

NSM. (12):—1104 E (p. 239): on ðam Tiwæsdæge ðær æfter ætywdan feower circulas to ðam middæge onbutan ðære sunnan hwites hiwes, ælc under oðran gebroiden swylec hi gemetet waerøn.—50 F: Her Paulus gebunden wearð gesend to Rome (or pred.?).—755 F: & Sibertes bröðer, Cynehard gehaten, ofshoh Cynewulf on Merantune. So: 604 A (or pred.?), 777 E, 1130 E.—Other examples:—

1118 E and 1127 Eª: gewundod; 1154 E: lwued (or post-positive attrib.?); 3 A: ofsticod; 1086 Eª: ungenderad (or pred.?); 1048 E: unsweican (or pred.?).

NSN. (1):—1127 Eª (p. 256ª): ðær wæs se Scotte kyng Dauid & eall ða heaued læred & læued ðæt wæs on Engleland. [May be considered plural as by Plummer.]

NPM. (15):—1066 Dª, b, c (p. 199ª): ða Engliscan hi hindan hetelice slogon oð ðæt hig sume to sceype coman, sume adrunecn & sume eac forhærne & swa mislice forfærene, ðæt ðær wæs lyt to lafe.—Other examples:—gehadode: 995 F, 1012 E, 1095 E, 1102 E; 449 A: geleædade; 1083 Eª: gewepnede (or pred.?); hadode: 1014 E, 1023 D, 1046 E (manig mann ðerto ge hadode ge læwede); 1096 E: hungerbitene; 911 A: unbefohtenene (or pred.?); 1070 E: wepnode.

GSM. (1):—1100 E (p. 235ª): ælces mannes gehadodes & læwedes.

GPM. (1):—656 Eª (p. 29ª): be his broðre ræd . . . & be al his gewiten ræd, læred & lawed, ðe on his kynerice wæron.

DSM. (1):—1053 Cª: se Wulfwi feng to ðam biscoprice ðe Ulf hædle be him libbendum & ofadæfdom.

ASN. (2):—992 Eªª: & ðæt scip genamon call gewæpnod & gewægod.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.
THE APPOSSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 181

Note.—As the examples show, in many instances the participles (both present and preterite) above cited from the Chronicle are in immediate juxtaposition with intransitive verbs like ætewan and faran; hence even more examples than those queried may be predicative rather than appositive.

THE LAWS (19).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (4).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (3).

ASM. (1) :—Ine, c. 35: Se ðe ðeof slihð, he mot aðe ge-cyðan, ðæt he hine fleondne for ðeof sloge.

ASN. (2) :—Cnut II., c. 24, Int.â & b : nan ðinge . . . ne libbende ne liegende.

Note: Accusative Compounds.—Three accusative-compound participles occur in the Laws:—Ine, c. 45: Burg-bryce mon sceal betan . . . gesiðcundes monnes landhæbbendes xxxv; and Ine, c. 51â & b : Gif gesiðcund mon landagende forsitte fierd, geselle cxx scill. and ðolie his landes; unlandagende lx scill. As the examples show, however, the participles are used attributively rather than appositively.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1) :—Wihtætead, c. 18: Preost hine clœnsie sylfes soðe, in his halgum hrægle ætforan wiofode, ðæs cweðende : “Ueritatem dico Christo, non mentior.”

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (15).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (1) :—Ine, c. 39: Gif hwa fare unaliefed fram his hlaforde (MS. B. has unalysede, which is perhaps a pure adverb).
NSN. (2):—Cnut II., c. 71, § 4ª³b: twa hors, i. gesadelod and oðer ungesadelod.

NPM. (2):—Æthelred vii., Appendix, § 7: ealle ... gehadode and læwedæ; Wihtræd, c. 4: ungestrodyne.


GPM. (1):—Eadmund ii., Introduction: mid minra witenā geðeahte, ge hadedra ge læwedra.

DSM. (2):—Ine, c. 18, title: Be cirliscum ðeofe gefongenum; Ine, c. 20, title: Be seorran cumenum men butan wege gemetton [MS. H.: gemettum].

DSN. (2):—Ælfred, c. 10, title: Be twelfhyndes monnes wife forlegenum; Ælfred, c. 9, title: Be bearneacnum wife ofsolegnum [MS. B: Be ðam ðæt man ofslea wif mid cilde].

ASM (1):—Ælfred, c. 35, § 4: Gif he hine to preoste bescrire unbundenne.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

BENEDICT: (72).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (63).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (25).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (12):—

NSM. (3):—2. 18: and ðus acsiende cywyð = 4. 21: Et quaerens Dominus . . . iterum dicit.—Other examples:—47. 16: arisende = 88. 17: surgentes; 52. 9: wuniende mid upahefednesse = 98. 2: elatus.

NPM. (9):—47. 12: hy butan eleunge arisende caflice gehwylc oðerne forestæppe and to ðam Godes weorce efste = 88. 13: absque mora surgentes festinent.—Other examples:—
62. 15\(^b\): *drincende* = 118. 2: *bibentibus*; 62. 15\(^a\): *etende* = 118. 1: *comedentibus*; 134. 17\(^*\): *libbende* = 231. 8: *victiantes*; 135. 23\(^*\): *sittende* = 231. 36: *sedentes*; 138. 2\(^*\): *wuniende* = 233. 22: *persistentes*; *wuniende* (fram) = remoti, 134. 18\(^*\): = 231. 11; = *stantes*, 135. 23\(^*\): = 231. 35; 137. 14\(^*\): *wyrcende* = 233. 6: *operantes*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):—

**NSM.** (2):—133. 13: *Swa hwylc swa onettende efst to ōam heofonlican eōle, gefreme ærest* = 206. 11: *Quisquis ergo ad patriam coelestem festinas . . . perfice*; 68. 14: *hreou-sigende* = 128. 20: *peniteat*.

**NPM.** (1):—68. 21: *wen is, dæt sume oððe sleaclice lagon and slepon, oððe sittende mid idere spellunge deofle to micelne forwyrdes intingan gesaeldon* = 130. 4: *erit forte talis qui se aut recollocect et dormiat, aut certe sedeat sibi foris, vel fabulis vacet, et detur occasio maligno*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative of manner or of means (1):—

**NSM.** (1):—71. 7: *butan he ðærrrihte beforan eallum hine dædbetende geeaðmede* = 134. 15: *nisi satisfactione ibi coram omnibus humiliatus fuerit*.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):—

**NPM.** (1):—9. 23: *æfre unstæðolfæste and woriende* = 16. 9: *semper vagi et numquam stabiles*.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

**NPM.** (1):—9. 7: *geleorniað dæt hie anstandonde . . . ongean deofol . . . winnan magan* = 14. 4: *et beni instructi: . . jam sine consolatione alterius . . contra vitia pugnare sufficiunt*.

*All starred references are to the Appendix of Benedict*. 

---

**THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 183**
6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (7):

NSM. (4):—31. 14: geomriende clypude = 58. 13; 24. 6: smeagende gehealde = 46. 24; 4. 15*: tremegeende = 8. 21; 60. 1: cweðe...saniciende = 112. 3.

NPM. (3):—132. 1: betende = 204. 3; 2. 10: elciende = 4. 15; 135. 6: swindende = 231. 20.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (38).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (25):—


NSF. (1):—2. 9: si godcunde stefn myngað and clypað, ðus eweðende = 4. 14: divina quotidie clamans quid nos admoneat vox dicens.


2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb generally is subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (7):

NSM. (6):—25. 10: clypiende = 50. 3: dicit; eweđende = dicat, 11. 6 = 18. 18, 26. 2 = 50. 20; ib. = ait, 21. 9 = 42. 8; ib. = dicit, 51. 14 = 96. 9; ib. = dicant, 82. 24 (Wells Fragment) = 152. 5.

NSN. (1):—22. 10: clypiende = 44. 12: clamat.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

NPM. (1):—134. 13*: ęe . . wesestowa and ælætu and anwunung gelufiað, geefenlæcende Elian etc. = 231. 6: ad imitationem scilicet Eliae.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (5):

NSM. (2):—4. 10: clypiende = 8. 16; 101. 6: faestniende = 166. 16.

NPM. (3):—131. 15: awyrpended (MS. F.: awyrpen) = 204. 1; 6. 1: geefenlæcende = 12. 2; 138. 8: ðieggende = 233. 27.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (9).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (8).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

NSM. (2):—2. 3: gegremed = 4. 6: irritatus; 28. 2: geondead = angaritia: 7. 54.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerundive (1):

NSM. (1):—34. 2: æfter ñam fylige capitel of ñæra apostola lare gemyndelice butan bec gesed = 64. 7: Lectio sequatur, ex corde recitanda.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—
NPM. (2):—44. 22**b: eala ðær we asolcene and awacode on anre wucan gelaesten = 82. 26: quod nos tepidi utinam septimana integra persolvamus.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (3):

NSM. (1):—28. 6: geneadod = 54. 9 (cf. 28. 2, where geneadod = angariati).

NPM. (2):—11. 16**b: getrymede and anbryrde = 20. 5.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):

DPM. (1):—25. 16: and nu fram ðam englum us betæchtum ure weorc . . . beoð gebode = 50. 13: et ab Angelis nobis deputatis . . . opera nostra nuntiantur.

THE BLICKLING HOMILIES (52).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (36).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (27).

NSM. (10):—235. 12: Ond ðus cwësænde se halga Andreas asette his heafod ofer renne his discipula & he onslæp.—Other examples:—133. 17: cumeænde; 193. 8: dwolgende; 249. 20: efætænde (or pred.?); 113. 29: gnornægende (by Flamme classed as pred. (§ 169), by Morris translated as appos.); 179. 20: leægende; locænde: 229. 28, 245. 8, 245. 16; 231. 9: ðurh-wunægende.

NSF. (5):—5. 8**b: Gehyron we nu to hwylæm gemæt sceo arwyrde fæmne & sceo halige, on hire cantice geærende and blissægende, sang ðæs cwæð. —7. 16: ðæt Maria . . . smeæde & swigænde ðohæt hwæt sceo haæætæng ware. [Flamme (§ 169. 2) classes swigænde as pred.; but Morris correctly translates: “and silently considered.” Swigænde may be considered an adverb.] 249. 1**ab: hrymænde, weænde.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 187

NSN. (1):—199. 17: Ða was he mid yrre swellice onstyred, forðon ðe hit [= hryðær] swa wædenode eode, & swa ofermodlice ferde. [Flamme (§ 169) classes wædenode as pred.; but Morris correctly translates: “because it had gone about so madly and had behaved so arrogantly.” Clearly wædenode is coordinate with ofermodlice, and may like it be classed as an adverb.]

NPM. (5):—225. 17: cumað arisende wulfsas, todrifsað ðine heorde.—Other examples: — gefeonde: 201. 10, 203. 2 (or pred.?), 207. 8 (or pred.?) ; 239. 27: ingangende.

NPN. (1):—243. 5: and ingangende on ðæt carcern hie [= ða deoflu] gestodon on gesihðe ðæs eadigan Andreas.

DSM. (2):—115. 18*: we him fleondum fylgeas.—245. 3: Þus gebiddende ðam halgan Andrea Drithnes stæfn wæs ge-worden on Ebreise, cweðende.

DPM. (2):—171. 11ª: swa him Drihten Crist, eallum rihtgelýfdum mannum wunigendum for his noman, & ðurh wunigendum in tintregum on soðre andetnesse oð ende his lifes untweogendlice, geheht & cwæð.

ASM. (1):—115. 18ª: & hine feallendne lufiað.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (9).

NSM. (4):—239. 22: he gesæt be ðam swere anbidende hwæt hæm gelimpan seolde (or pred.?) ; 249. 17ª: he ðær wunode mid him seofon dagas, lærende and strangende hira heortan on geleafan . . . Cristes.—57. 7: spiwende.

NSF. (2):—cweðende: 229. 27, 245. 4.

NPM. (1):—133. 27: Swylce is gecweden ðæt hie ealle on yppan wunedon, ðonon bidende ðæs Halgan Gastes.

NPN. (1):—243. 7: hie [= ða deoflu] gestodon on gesihðe ðæs eadigan Andreas, and hine bismriende mid myclere bismre, and hie cwædon.

ASM. (1):—215. 21: cweðende.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (16).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (4):—89. 34: raðe he lifgende ut eode of his byrgenne mid his agenre mihte awëht.—87. 36: & befealden to Hælendes cneowum he cwæð.—Other examples:—187. 28: gebeagod; 225. 33: getrymed.

NSF. (1):—197. 20: Æonne is ðær on neaweste sum swiðe mære burh betwih ðære se seo is nemen Adriaticus on ðæm munte Garganus gesetel se is haten Sepontus.

NPM. (5):—85. 9: Hie ða swiðe forhte & abregde ðus cwædon.—Other examples:—221. 28: gegeyrede; 221. 28: gesceldode; 221. 28: gesperode; 171. 28: geweorðode.

NPF. (1):—209. 36: he gesæh ðæt on ðæm clifæ hangodan on ðæm is gean bearwum manige sweorte saula be heora handum gebundene. [Flamme (§ 174. 2) says this wavers between appos. and pred.]

NPN. (1):—127. 33: Swylce eae syndon on ðære myclan cirican ehta eagdyrelu swiðe mycele of glæse geworht. [Flamme (§ 173) thinks that geworht is possibly predicative, but Morris translates it as appositive.]

ASM. (2):—11. 7: Arweordian we Crist on binne asetene; 181. 1: beheafdodne.

APF. (1):—31. 20: ðas dæda ðus gedone from Drihtne (but the text is corrupt).

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

DSF. (1):—197. 6: se ðe is on ealra ymbhwyrftæ to weordænnen & to wuldrienne his ciricean, gehweðer ge his agen geweorc ge on his naman gehalgod (but the passage is corrupt).

Note.—The text is too corrupt to construe ahafen in 115. 32.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 189

ÆLFRIC'S HOMILIES,* THORPE (676).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (477).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (203).

NSM. (90):—II. 78b: se scead on hine gelyfende his synna geandette. So: I. 62b; II. 130a. —II. 132b12: se bispoc, scinende on ... geearnungum and ... geæincum, on heofenian rice, mid ðam Ælm Sc. on ecere blisse rixiende wuldrað. So scinende: I. 466a; II. 352a2, 502b1.—Other examples:—I. 386a2: andbidigende; I. 390b3: arisende; I. 226a: astigende; II. 136a1: aweagarende; II. 176a1: bistigende; blissigende; I. 340a12, 580b, 596a45, II. 426a; II. 300a1: byrnende; I. 516a: cnucigende; I. 124a: daæbetende; drothni(g)ende: I. 398b, II. 546b1; II. 82b: ehtende; ðægnigende: I. 596a1, II. 312a3; II. 442b: farende; feallende: I. 380b2, 390b2; forðigende: II. 40b, 142b2, 176b2; forðsteppende: I. 278a, 500a2, II. 90a1; II. 360a: fundigende; II. 176b4: gesonde; I. 56b1: gewitende; I. 410a: gyddigende; II. 246a1: haftigende; hangi(g)ende: I. 594a1, 596b8, II. 256b, 260b; I. 380b3: hroesende; II. 302a: hrymende (or pred.?) II. 152b1: liegende; II. 474b: lutieide; lybbende: I. 152b2, 364b1, 500a2, 502b2; I. 54b: millisigende; II. 182b2: onbesonde; II. 134a: plegende; I. 294b: reordigende; sittende: I. 346a1, 548b, II. 134b2, 382b1; II. 500a1: smaeigende; II. 138b2: stamende; suwi(g)ende: II. 230a, 350a2; I. 480b: sveltende; I. 338b2: syngigende; I. 596b2: tihtende; truu(g)ende: I. 2b, II. 478a1; I. 374a: ðeotende; II. 168a3: ðrutigende; II. 204b1: ðuwhtuwigende; II. 130a3: underfonde; II. 140b3: unforhtigende; II. 164b: wedende; I. 52b: welwillende (or adverb?); wepende: II. 134b; writende: II. 332b1, 348a1; wunigende: I. 134a, 150a23, 232a, 326b, 346a2, II. 142b3, 440a, 498b1; I. 432a: yrsigende.

*The superior letters (a and b) refer respectively to the top and the bottom of the page; the superior figures distinguish the several examples.
NSF. (11):—i. 438\textsuperscript{b1} & \textsuperscript{b2}: heo drohtnode gæmænelic mid ðam apostolicum werode, infærende and utfærende betwux him.—Other examples:—i. 98\textsuperscript{a2}: donde; i. 146\textsuperscript{b}: lybbende; i. 66\textsuperscript{b1}: rarigende; i. 440\textsuperscript{a1}: sneagende; i. 564\textsuperscript{a2}: utflo-wende; wepende: i. 566\textsuperscript{b1}, ii. 146\textsuperscript{b}; ii. 434\textsuperscript{b}: writende; ii. 182\textsuperscript{b4}: wunigende.

NSN. (7):—i. 372\textsuperscript{b2}: ðæt folc ða mid anre stemme olhipigende cwæð. So: i. 594\textsuperscript{b2}.—Other examples:—i. 566\textsuperscript{b2}: blissigende; ii. 140\textsuperscript{a3}: bræstligende; ii. 450\textsuperscript{b}: hreosende; ii. 142\textsuperscript{b1}: sprencende; i. 296\textsuperscript{b}: wunigende.

NS. M. or F. (2):—i. 546\textsuperscript{b1} & \textsuperscript{b2}: fyligde heap... manna... ðurhunuwigende, to Criste geðeodegende.

NS. F. or N. (1):—i. 324\textsuperscript{b1}: gecynd... wunigende.

NPM. (62):—i. 610\textsuperscript{a2} & \textsuperscript{a3}: Sind eac summæ steorran leoh-beamede, faerlice arisende and hærdlice gewitende.—i. 592\textsuperscript{b1} & \textsuperscript{b2}: ðær ge symle blissia\$ b, bloewende and mid Criste rixigende. So rixigende in i. 500\textsuperscript{b}.—Other examples: i. 534\textsuperscript{b}: biddende; blissigende; i. 56\textsuperscript{b4}, 564\textsuperscript{a}; ii. 258\textsuperscript{a}: bugende; i. 596\textsuperscript{a}: olhipigende; ii. 454\textsuperscript{a1}: cumende; i. 68\textsuperscript{b}: dæødhetende; drothni(g)ende: i. 536\textsuperscript{b}, ii. 158\textsuperscript{b2}, 296\textsuperscript{b2}, 404\textsuperscript{a}; dwelzigende: i. 340\textsuperscript{b}, ii. 124\textsuperscript{b}; feallende: i. 38\textsuperscript{b}, 560\textsuperscript{a2}, ii. 126\textsuperscript{b}, 214\textsuperscript{a}, 236\textsuperscript{b}, 246\textsuperscript{b1}; ii. 34\textsuperscript{a2}: feohtende; ii. 334\textsuperscript{a1}: fleogende; i. 352\textsuperscript{a}: forðstæppende; ii. 130\textsuperscript{b1}: gelyfende; i. 46\textsuperscript{b}: hrymende; ii. 138\textsuperscript{a3}: liegende; i. 514\textsuperscript{a2}: lutigende; ii. 130\textsuperscript{a4}: lybbende; milsigende: i. 370\textsuperscript{a}, 540\textsuperscript{b}; i. 78\textsuperscript{b2}: niðerfeallende; scinende: ii. 136\textsuperscript{b1}, 496\textsuperscript{a}; i. 606\textsuperscript{b3}: singende; sprencende: ii. 248\textsuperscript{b}, 284\textsuperscript{a2}; ii. 136\textsuperscript{b2}: stymende; ii. 212\textsuperscript{b}: suwigende; sveltende: ii. 34\textsuperscript{a3}, 554\textsuperscript{a}; i. 496\textsuperscript{b1}: synigende; ii. 606\textsuperscript{b1}: tæcende; i. 606\textsuperscript{b2}: tihtende; i. 84\textsuperscript{a1}: upaspringende; ii. 334\textsuperscript{b3}: wædligende; wedende: i. 50\textsuperscript{b1}, 470\textsuperscript{a}, ii. 232\textsuperscript{b}; ii. 454\textsuperscript{a2}: wepende; wunigende: i. 150\textsuperscript{a3}, 228\textsuperscript{b2}, 238\textsuperscript{a}, 338\textsuperscript{a} (cf. Abs. Pto. in A.-S., p. 11), 406\textsuperscript{a2}, 544\textsuperscript{b1}, 610\textsuperscript{b}, ii. 204\textsuperscript{b2}; ii. 236\textsuperscript{a}: yrsigende.

NPN. (2):—ii. 336\textsuperscript{a}: ða deoflu feohtende scuton heora fyrenan flan ongean ða sawle;—ii. 350\textsuperscript{b3}: hlíhende.

NP. M. or N. (1):—i. 60\textsuperscript{a1}: weras and wif... feognigende.
GPM. (2):—I. 30b²; wearð gesewen micel menigu heofonlices werodes God herigendra and singendra (or substantive?). So: I. 38a².

DSM. (4):—I. 494a: and olypigendum Drihtne to ðam ecan life cælice geandwyrt (or Abs.? Cf. Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 10).—I. 324b³: to ðam geæaffullan heape, on ðysre worulde wunigende.—Other examples:—I. 362a: cumendum (or Abs.? Cf. Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 10); II. 180b¹: ridendum.

DPM. (6):—II. 186b¹ & ²: cyðde his forðsið on ær sumum his leorning-cnihtum mid him drohtningendum and sumum ðærum on fyrleenum stowum wunigendum.—Other examples:—geýfendum: I. 228b, II. 284a³; I. 440a²: onlociendum; II. 284a⁴: spreccendum.

DDM. (1):—II. 172a²: ne æteowode ic inc bam slapendum?

ASM. (4):—II. 418a³, 4. 5: underfoh me nu behreowsiendne, ðone ðe ðu ðo ðís andigendne and tælendne forbære; I. 496b¹: lutigende.

ASF. (2):—I. 376a: se dry worhtæ ða ærene neædðran, styrigende swylec heo cucu waren; II. 344a²: byrnende.

ASN. (2):—II. 508b¹: cwæð ðæt he hit [= treow] underfenge feallende to foldan.—II. 150a: liegende.

APM. (4):—II. 246b⁴: feallende; I. 334b¹: liegende; II. 154a: lybbende; II. 242b²: sittende.

APF. (2):—II. 350b¹ & ²: ða deoflu gielædon fif manna sawla, hreowlice gnorniende and grimetende, into ðam fyre.

2. With an Object (274).

NSM. (176):—II. 142a: ða begann se wer dreorig wepan, andracigende ðæs ungellimpes.—II. 188a: stod sum arwurðe wer mid ... gyrlum, axigende etc.—II. 164a²: Benedictus ... ðæhte him ðæs dædbote, bebeodende ðæt etc.—I. 372b¹: Se apostol genealæhte ðam liæ mid æðeledum earmum, ðæs biddende. So: I. 126a¹, 418b¹, 428a¹ (w. gen.), 434b (ib.), 452a (ib.), 456b, 464b¹, 598a³, II. 26a, 110b, 134b³, 138b, 144b², 180b², 304a², 304b, 418a¹, 498b² (w. gen.), 504b².—I.
62a: Johannes beseeh us cuwéndende (cuwéndende). So: I. 50b 2, 66b 3, 78b 1 & 3, 88b, 98b 1, 120b 1 & 2, 124b, 126b, 192b, 206b, 208b, 222b, 242b, 264b, 294b, 314b, 324b 2, 328b, 350b, 358a 1 & 2, 364b, 366b, 370b, 376b, 380b, 380b 1, 390b, 390b 1, 404b, 406b 1, 418b 2, 430b, 436b, 442b, 450b, 450b, 480b, 482b, 502b 2, 510b 2, 520b (= dicens), 522b & b, 530b, 534b, 538b 1, 548b, 550b 2, 560b 3, 568a 1 & 2, 568b 2, 570b, 572b 2, 576b, 596a 1, 600b 1, 604b, 606b, 610a 4; II. 10b, 12b, 14a, 16a, 34b 4, 52b, 62b 1, 72b, 84b 1, 112b 1 & 2, 182b 1, 266b, 288b, 312b 1, 328b, 384b, 400b 1, 406b, 414b 2, 418b 2, 428b 1, 428b 2, 432b, 464b, 468b 1, 538b, 542b, 562b, 576b. — Other examples: — II. 540b 1: belæwende; bigende: II. 298b, 408b; II. 184b 1: blissigende; bodi(g)ende: I. 370b 1, 560a 1, II. 130a 1; II. 414b 1: bysmrigende (w. dat.): I. 48a: elyngigende; I. 66a 2: ferigende; II. 446b 2: forbugende; II. 130b 2: forhogiende; II. 168b 1: forhtigende; II. 352b 3: fylgende (w. dat.): II. 418b 1 & 2: geeselæcende; I. 78b 2: gehyrende; II. 376b 1 & 2: gælnigende; hæbbende: I. 126b, 130b 2; II. 432b: herigende; lævende: I. 370b 2, 596b 2; I. 400b 1: licetende; I. 600b 2: manigende; II. 320b: oferscawigende; II. 446b 1: ondrægende; I. 508b: onstandende (should be on standende?); recoende: II. 350a 1, 356b; I. 388b: sawende (or pred.?): seeawil(g)ende: II. 32a 2, 120a 3; secende: I. 338b 1 (or pred.?), II. 358b, 448b; I. 596b 3: seggende; I. 388b 1: seçende; II. 138b 1: syngende; II. 334b: sneagende; II. 182b 3: swerigende; swuteligende: II. 400b 1, 466b; II. 540b 2: teone; tihtende: I. 528b 1, II. 328b; II. 326b 1: tooctyngigende; todælende: I. 322b (w. dat.), II. 338b, 344b 1; I. 106b: touwræende; II. 128b: ðæowigende (w. dat.); ðæregende: II. 170b, 256b 2; I. 608b 1: undergynnende; II. 346b 2: wilninge (w. gen.); writende: I. 272b 3, 364b 2; I. 572b 1: wynændende.

NSF. (16): — II. 76b: Seo endlyfte tid bið seo forwerode ealdnyss, ðam deaðe genealæcende.—Other examples: — arofni(g)ende: I. 30b 3, 42b 1 & 2; biddende: I. 66b 2, 566b 2, II. 184b 1; cuwéndende: I. 104b, 194b, 388b 2, 426b 3, II. 42a, 432b 1: heoræowigende: II. 438b (w. dat.), 440b 2 (ib.): — I. 98b 3: ondrægende; II. 182b 3: ðæowigende.
NSN. (8):—II. 578b: folæ ham gewende, ḡancigende ðæm Ælmihtigan ealra his goda.—Other examples:—biddende: i. 68a, 140b; cweðende: i. 200a, 594b, II. 110a, 114a; II. 256b: ðreagende.

NS. M. or N. (1):—II. 342a: sang ... cweðende etc.

NPM. (61):—I. 38a: hi ... godum mannum sibbe bodedon, swutellice æteowiénæ ðæt etc.—Other examples:—II. 200b: anbidigende (w. gen.); II. 548a: andswariende; bfrinende: i. 78a, 104a (= dicentes); biddende: i. 74a, 562b, II. 30b, 160b, 176a, 396b, 484b, 486b; II. 252b: bigende; bodigende: II. 492b; II. 506a: clypigende; cweðende: i. 4a, 64a, 68b, 510b (= dicentes), 538b, 560b, 596b, II. 112b, 172b, 252b, 300b, 484b, 488a; II. 168b: cwíðende;

II. 534b: drincende; II. 492b: dwelienae (or pred.?); II. 534a: etende; I. 588b: ferigende; I. 526b: gadriyende;

II. 226b: geœuenœændæ; I. 560b: gehyrsumigende (w. dat.); I. 90a: hebbende; healdende: I. 528b, 538b; herigende: I. 32a, 42b; II. 474a: leasetende (or pred.?); mærsigende: I. 544b, II. 194b, II. 248b, meldigende; II. 34a: oferswiþende;

II. 490b: onlihende; II. 248a: sleande; I. 428b: swingende; ḡancigende (w. dat. and gen.): I. 102a, 606b, II. 272b: ðeowigende (w. dat.): II. 70b, 310a; II. 250a: wurðigende; wuldrigende: I. 32a, 42b; II. 130a: wundrigende (w. gen.); II. 490b: wyrcende.

NPN. (4):—II. 56b: Æt ðæm gifturn wæron gesette six stænene wæterfatu, healdende ænlipige twyfealædæ gemetu oððe ðryfealæ.——II. 548a: stodon twa heofonlice werod ætforan ðære cytan dura, singende heofonliche sang (or pred.?)—cweðende: I. 414b, 416b.

NP. M. or N. (1):—II. 60b: weraæ and wif ... cweðende.

GP. (2):—II. 30b: wearsæ geseven micel menigu heofonlices werodes God herigendra. So: I. 38b.

DPM. (1):—II. 440b: swa swa he behet eallum him ðeniendum.

APM. (4):—I. 334b: Manega Lazaras ge habbað nu liegende æt eowrum gatum, biddende eowre oferflowend-

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (199).

I. Without an Object (194).

NSM. (94):—II. 182a1: he sæ særle abiled aweg tengde.
—II. 10*: Þeøs ðyrnys is an God; ðæt is se Fæder and his wisdom of him ysfum æfre acenned. So: I. 34b, 150a1, 222a, 278b2, 464b2, 500a1, II. 42b3, 204b3, 366a. Other examples:—
II. 352a1: afyllod; II. 510b: afyrht (or pred.?); I. 550a1: ahafen; ahangen: II. 598b, 606b; astreht: I. 426b2, II. 186b3; II. 332b3: æSelboren; I. 434a2: awed; II. 254b: awend; I. 598b: aworpen; II. 120a1: befangen; I. 426b2: befrinen; I. 56b2: bewæfed; II. 382b3: fornumen; I. 66a1: forseyldigod; II. 424b: fulfremed; I. 594b1: gewyligod; II. 414b2: genesumod; II. 250a2: gebolgen; gebyld: II. 390b, 412b2; gedrefed: I. 414b1; II. 140a1: geflegen; gefretewod: II. 118b; II. 306a1: gefuldod; I. 52a2: gefultumod; geglen(c)g(e)d: II. 512b2, 518b2; II. 130b2: gehadol; II. 244a: gehalgod; gehaten: I. 502a, II. 152a2, 304a1, 308a1, 332b2, 348a2, 412b1, 488a2; gehathiyr: II. 374b, 424b; II. 250b2: gelædd; gelaðod: I. 128a, II. 54a; II. 270b: geliffæst; II. 250b1: gelogod; geliyfed: II. 152a1, 332b4; I. 468b2: gemartyrod; II. 158b1: gemenged; II. 348a3: gemetegod; I. 588b: geneadod; II. 24a: geripod; II. 42b2: gesceapen; gescryd(d): I. 528b, 578b (or pred.?), II. 312b3, 382b2, 512b1; geset(t): I. 126a3, 130a1, 218a1; II. 234b: gesworæ; I. 428b: gotgen; I. 614b: gotread; II. 36b: geswungen; II. 516b2: gewaht; gewepnod: I. 450b2, II. 334a2, 502a; geworht: I. 278b1, II. 42b1; I. 426a1: gewreged; II. 518a: gewuldrod; I. 52a1: oftorfod; II. 150b: onbryrd; I. 290a: rihtyfed; II. 514a: toswollen; II. 372a: unabeden; II. 204a1: unbegunnen; I. 428b2: ungeaxod; II. 336b: ungederod; II. 204a2: ungeendod.

NSF. (14):—II. 546b3, 548a1: Hire modor, Redempta gehaten, stod hire ofer, micclum afyrht for sæm heofonlican
leohete. So gehaten: II. 284\textsuperscript{a1}, 306\textsuperscript{a2}, 584\textsuperscript{a}.—Other examples: —I. 446\textsuperscript{a}: ahafen; II. 58\textsuperscript{a}: astreht; I. 502\textsuperscript{b}: adrawen; I. 60\textsuperscript{b}: awreht; II. 90\textsuperscript{a2}: fortedene; II. 138\textsuperscript{b2}: gela\textsuperscript{d}od; II. 308\textsuperscript{b}: getintregod; II. 498\textsuperscript{a}: geworht; II. 586\textsuperscript{b}: ymbscryd (or pred.?).

NSN. (16):—I. 184\textsuperscript{b1\&\textsuperscript{a2}}: ða fif hlafas wæron swylce hit sæd ware, na on eordan besawen, ac gemæni\textsuperscript{g}ylf fram ðam ðe eordan geworhte.—Other examples:—II. 572\textsuperscript{a}: afyrht; II. 494\textsuperscript{b1\&\textsuperscript{a2}}: agoten; I. 352\textsuperscript{b}: beclysed; II. 140\textsuperscript{a2}: bepæht; II. 326\textsuperscript{b2}: forscyldgod; II. 272\textsuperscript{b2}: gleblodgod; gehaten: II. 312\textsuperscript{a2}, 438\textsuperscript{a}: gescrydd; I. 508\textsuperscript{b1}: gesett; II. 510\textsuperscript{b3}: gedæht; II. 140\textsuperscript{b1}: ofscamod; II. 510\textsuperscript{b2}: loslopen.

NS. F. or N. (1);—I. 42\textsuperscript{b4}: gemynd ... geswutelod.

NPM. (20):—I. 608\textsuperscript{a2}: ðæt we huru his genealæcendan dom, mid mislicum swinglum afterde, oudrædon.—Other examples:—II. 326\textsuperscript{b2}: acennede; I. 98\textsuperscript{a4}: ascyrede; asende: I. 348\textsuperscript{a1\&\textsuperscript{a2}}, 540\textsuperscript{a}: I. 560\textsuperscript{b1}: fordemde; fornumene: II. 246\textsuperscript{b2}, 348\textsuperscript{b}: I. 84\textsuperscript{a2}: forsonedene; I. 566\textsuperscript{a1}: gedrehte; I. 298\textsuperscript{b}: geglengede; I. 504\textsuperscript{b}: gelærde; I. 10\textsuperscript{a2}: gesceapene; I. 538\textsuperscript{b2}: gescrydde; II. 396\textsuperscript{b4}: gewæhte; II. 246\textsuperscript{b3}: gewæernode; I. 526\textsuperscript{b}: gewriçene; I. 544\textsuperscript{b4}: gewunode; I. 610\textsuperscript{a1}: leoht-beamede.

NPF. (3):—II. 174\textsuperscript{a}: Twa mynecenna waren droht-nigende on gehendyse his mynstres of æxelborene mæggæ asprunyene.—Other examples:—I. 366\textsuperscript{b}: bepæhte; II. 298\textsuperscript{a}: geendode.

NPN. (3):—II. 380\textsuperscript{a}: deoflu, ðe feollon to his fotum, mid fyrhte fornumene (or pred.?).—II. 326\textsuperscript{a1}: comon cwelmæere deoflu swutellice gesewene, on swartum hiwe, in to ðam eilde.—II. 354\textsuperscript{b}: He befran ða hwam ða gebytlu gemyte ware, swa mærlice getimbrode.

GPM. (1):—II. 290\textsuperscript{a}: gelaðunge gecorenra manna to ðam ecan life.

DSM. (2):—II. 546\textsuperscript{a}: G. awrat be sumum geðyldigan were, Stephanus gehaten.—II. 308\textsuperscript{a2}: ðæt foran ðam casere, Aurelianus genamod.
DSF. (2):—π. 494*: becomon to ane heafodbyrig, Suanir gehaten;—π. 546b₂: be sumere myneceyn, Romula gehaten.

DPM. (1):—π. 286*: Sume geewemdon englum on heora gesthusum underfangenum ñurh cumliðnyss.

ASM. (21):—π. 596¹, ², ³: Íc gelyfe on ñenne Crist, Hælend Drihten, ñone ancenndan Godes Sunu, of ñam Fæder acenned ær ealle worulda, God of Gode, Leocht of Leochtæ, Soþne God of Soþum Gode, acennedne na geworhtne. .So acennedne: i. 198*.—π. 168a¹: asende his swurdboran, Riggo gehaten (sic!). So gehaten = an accusative: π. 358a¹, 468a² (= eo nomine), 480b, 492b².—π. 162b¹: asende him ñenne focan to lace mid attre gemencged. Other examples:—π. 112b: befangenne; π. 598b²: forlorenne; π. 92a: forðroastne; π. 280a: gebrædne; π. 252a: gecigedne; π. 120a²: geende-byrdne; i. 210a: gefrætevowdne; i. 330b: geglenegedne; π. 416b²: gehøstne; gescorydne: π. 168a², 500b.

ASF. (2):—π. 182b²: se halga wer hæfdæ ane swustor, Scolastica gehaten; π. 124a*: afandode.

ASN. (7):—π. 264a²: Ne ete ge of ñam lambe nan ñing breað, ne on wætære gesoden, ac gebræd to fyre. So gesoden: π. 278b¹.—Other examples:—π. 260b²: gedeced; π. 198b: gefadod; i. 42a²: gehalgod; i. 134b: gelacod; i. 42a¹: gewemmed.

APM. (3):—π. 516b¹: oððe hwam betæhst ñu us nu forletene?—Other examples:—π. 486b¹: gedrehte; i. 568b¹: gescrydde.

APF. (3):—i. 68a¹ & ²: ge begeatæn eow ðæosterfullæ wununga mid dracum afyllæde, and ... mid ... witum afyllæde.—i. 506*: Þæ gesawon hi æþforan ðære cyreæ norððura, on ñam marmanstæne, swilcæ mannes folfæsta fæstlice on ñam stæne geðyde. [Though Sweet and others give follest as masculine only, it seems to be feminine here. See, too, i. 508a*]

APN. (1):—i. 218a²: se sacerd bleetsian seeole palmtwigu and hi swa gebletsode ñam folce dalan.
II. WITH AN OBJECT (5).

NSN. (1):—i. 594\textsuperscript{a} \textsuperscript{2}: ðu ceaf, ecum ontendnyssum gegearcod, gehyr me.

NPM. (1):—i. 544\textsuperscript{b} \textsuperscript{3}: deorum geferlæhte, to engelicum spræcum gewunode, on micclum wundrum scinende wæron.

NPN. (1):—ii. 314\textsuperscript{b}: manega sind beboda mannum gesette (or pred.?).

GSF. (1):—ii. 292\textsuperscript{a}: tihð ðurh miltsunge him forgufenre mihte (or Abs. Dat.? See Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 11).

APM. (1):—ii. 598\textsuperscript{b} \textsuperscript{1}: gescyld ðine ðeowan ðinum mægenðrymme underðeodde.

Note: Latin Participles occur as follows:—(1) untranslated: credentes, persuadentes, secuti, in Pref. to i.; (2) translated: dicens (dicientes) = cuægende, i. 510\textsuperscript{b} \textsuperscript{1}, 520\textsuperscript{a} = befrinende in i. 104\textsuperscript{a};—raptum = ðe wæs gegripen, ii. 332\textsuperscript{b};—circumdata = ymbscryd, ii. 586\textsuperscript{b}.

ÆLFRIC'S LIVES OF SAINTS (543).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (335).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (129).

NSM. (54):—442. 24: com se arwurða swyðun to sumum . . . smyðe on sweene æteowiende wurðlice geglenecged.—xxviii. 6: Se casere wæs cene and reðe and deofolgild beode dwollice tibbende.—482. 182: he sona wearð hal beorhte locigende se ðe blind wæs.—Other examples:—478. 92: blyssigende; xxiii. B. 199\textsuperscript{1}: clypigende; 156. 134: drothnigende; xxiii. B. 640: eftcyrrende; 448. 100: fagnigende;—feallende: 396. 222, xxviii. 114; 282. 5: feohend [sic]; xxiii. B. 199\textsuperscript{b}: forðgangende; 14. 77: forðsteppende; xxiii. B. 645: geðyrstlaecende;—hangi(g)ende: 428. 212, 227, xxix. 254; xxiii. B. 733: hawigende; heofende: xxx. 180; xxiii. B. 366: hlihhende; 526. 617: hlydende; 466. 417: hoppende; xxiii. B. 726: hreowsigende; 174.
gende; 192. 379: drohtniende; xxiii. B. 115: gereordende; 110. 338: gilitinliende; 240. 18: libbende; liegendé: 54. 62, xxv. 496; xxv. 513: ridende; 326. 83: sprecende; xxv. 779: standende; 326. 100: æancigende; 94. 77: seonde; xxvi. 186: wundrigénde; 70. 330: wunigende.

NPN. (4):—224. 861 & 2: binnan ðam weron ealle cuce nyten creopende and gangunde (or pred.?).—Other examples:—xxvii. 39: dynigende; xxiv. 53: grymetende.

DSM. (2):—14. 79: Nis nanum menn on . . . life libbendum nanes ðinges swa mycel neod.—xxiii. B. 673: ðu mid tearum biddende, him eft ðer geðanc on befeofl ðu cwende. [I omit he after ðus, as does Skeat’s “B.”]

DSF. (3):—212. 40: forgif me ða to clænyysse to criste farendre.—xxiii. B. 752: geic eac gebiddan ðealhwæðere for me of ðyssere warulde hleorende on ðam monde etc.;—36. 185: liegendre.

ASM. (2):—78. 489: gelædde hine on mergen forð swiðe sægres hiwes buton sæcum womme and wel sprecande;—78. 4812: unspreende.

ASF. (2):—334. 216: Se sang geswutelað ða halgan ðyrnnysse on æure godcundnyssæ æfre wunigende; ib. xxix. 5 (?).

APM. (3):—388. 80: se cyning sende swyðe fela ærendraen acan to . . . eardum embe ðe axiende.—Other examples:—xxx. 429: gebiddende (or pred.?); 32. 130: liegendre.

II. With an Object (206).

NSM. (114):—xxvi. 137 & 2: he ðærbinnan wunode godes lof auorende and geirhtlæcende ðæt folc.—xxiii. B. 96: ðas weorc Zosimus behealdende hine sylfie geornlice to fulfremenysse æðened[e] gemang ðam emnwyrtum. So: xxx. 233.—60. 166: [he] com to basilie biddende fulluhtes. —62. 193: ða asende se ealdorman sona to basilie, biddende earmlæce ðæt etc.—78. 487: ac ðæt bisceop . . . wacode ealle ða niht mid ðam wædlæan hreoflian, biddende ðone hælend
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 201


NSN. (5):—xxiii. B. 595: ac godes word is eucu and scearp, innan leve rðis mennisce andgyt.—Other examples:—biddende: 60. 171, xxv. 716; xxiii. B. 324: cweðende; xxiii. B. 287: hæbbende (= reducens).

NPM. (44):—472. 9: gebugon to fulluhte behroowsigende heora synna.—Other examples:—biddende (w. g. or ac.): 46. 357(?), 70. 334, 138. 352, 240. 40, 242. 75, 400. 258, 448. 121, 452. 188; xxv. 336, 768; xxix. 172; xxvi. 79: bodigende; 136. 305: clypigende; cweðende: xxx. 140, 281, 425; xxix. 192: cyðende; xxvi. 238: feccende; xxviii. 10: folgiende (w. dat.); xxiii. B. 139: gefyllende; geweonde: xxiiii. B. 377, xxx. 184; 148. 24: halsigende; herif[g]ende: 70. 349 (or pred.?), 102. 222, 110. 338; 351, 142. 403; mærsigende: 26. 37, 230. 162, 242. 51 (or pred. ?); xxv. 495: sceotiende; 54. 56: secende (or pred. ?); seøgende: 146. 458, xxv. 121; ðænci[g]ende (w. dat. & gen.): 114. 410, 132. 249, 438. 85, 460. 322, 478. 96, xxv. 453; 80. 526: wuldrigende; 184. 249: wurðigende.

NP. F. or M. (1):—224. 66: wydewan and ðearfan ... ðæteowigende.

GSF. (1):—xxiii. B. 426: ða onhran soðlice min mod and ða eagan minre heortan hælo andgıt mid me sylfre
MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

Senende sæt me ðone ingang belucen ða onseormeganda (sic) minra misdæda (but, as is evident, the text is very corrupt).


ASM. (2):—480. 143: het se foresæda dema gelædan ðone halgan on hearðre raceenteage seor on wæcesið ferigende on scipe.—xxx. 411: se casere . . . het hine ungyrdan and bewæpnian and beforan his ansyne ætstandan mid his wife and his cildum swilce oferægændne his hlaforde bebod.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (208).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (205).


NPM. (37):—180. 167: ac hi . . . ablyegede cyrdon to heora . . . hlaforde.—468. 437: ðeoh ðe ða Iudeiscan ðurh deofol beswicene nollon gelyfan.—Other examples:—afyllede: 126. 168, xxvii. 60; afyrhte: 166. 317, xxv. 611, xxvi. 231, xxix. 305; 54. 53: alysde; 116. 25: ædelborne; xxvi. 93: curnene; fornurnene: 58. 138 (or pred.?), 204. 148, 326. 96; 126. 167: geborene; 342. 73: gebundene; geybilde: xxv. 488, xxvii. 149; 208. 216: geegsode; xxv. 339: gehyrte; 318. 172: gelesede; gelyf(e)de: xxiv. 2, xxv. 109, xxvii. 15; 184. 245: gemartyrode; xxv. 558: 
getemode; 460. 319: geunrubomode; gewæpnode; 190. 359, xxv. 333; xxv. 559: gewenode; geworhte: 386. 38, 408. 386; 506. 300: ofdræde; 298. 228: ofhrorene; xxv. 497: ofslagene; 54. 58: onbryrde; xxiii. B. 571: totorene (but the passage is corrupt).

NPF. (1):—xxv. 813: on ðysre worulde synd ðreo endebyrðynysse on annysse gesette; ðæt synd etc.

DSM. (7):—462. 351: oððæt hi becomon to sumum ænlicum felda ðægre geblowen.—xxv. 757: sum leogere . . . sæde ðam ealdormenn Apollonius geciged.—140. 368: Nicostratus . . . wearð . . . toforan ðam deman gebroht, fabianus gehaten. So gehaten: 224. 79, 402. 317, xxv. 331, xxvi. 121.

DSF. (11):—xxiii. B. 438: forðon witodlice genoh rihtlic is me swa besmitenre fram ðinre clænan ungewemmedynysse beon ascïrod.—xxiii. B. 598: Nu ic ðe . . . andbidde . . . ðæt ðu for me earmlicre forlegenre gebidde.—54. 83: gewendon to anre widgyllan byrig, Antiochia geciged. So geciged: 146. 462.—54. 66: ferde to ðære [flowendan] ea iordanis gehaten. So gehaten: 68. 325, 184. 264, 238. 11, xxv. 413, xxix. 4. 146.

DSN. (2):—196. 10: betæhte hi anum fulum wife Afrodosia geciged.—xxxi. 11: Martinus . . . wæs geboren on ðam fæstene Sabaria gehaten.

DS. M. or N. (1):—172. 36: He geglængde me mid orle of golde awefen.

ASM. (20):—44. 350¹*²: Basilla hæfde enne hæðene wogere, pompeius gecyged, swiðæ ægelboren. So geciged: xxix. 213.—312. 68: A. . . genam ðenne mycelne bollan mid bealuwe ofyllted.—xxvii. 11: forlet ða ðenne dæl on ðære yclan byrig ðe Crist on ðrowode, swa swa us cyðað gewritu, mid seolfre bewunden.—Other examples:—200. 75: gebigedne (or pred.?) ; xxiii. B. 661: gefylltedne; gehaten: 28. 67, 104. 230, 124. 125, 194. 409, 222. 42, 302. 277, 408. 396, xxv. 761, xxvi. 53, xxix. 204, 214; 78. 481¹: toswollen; 78. 482: una furunden.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 205


ASN. (2):—92. 26: ða fundon his magas sum ðælbornen meden basilissa gehaten; 132. 258: untobrocen.

APM. (1):—246. 146: unscryde.


APN. (1):—24. 225: ealle lichamlicra ðinga hiw heo mæg on hyre sylfre gehiwian, and swa gehiwode on hyre mode gehalden.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (3).

NSN. (1):—288. 71: forðan ðe heo gebedhus is, gode gehalgod.

ASM. (1):—xxiii. B. 676: Eala me ungesæligan swa rihtwislicre gesihðe afremdad me.

ASF. (1):—xxiii. B. 442: gefultuma me nu anegre ælces fylstes bedeled (MS. G: bedeled).

Note: Latin Participles occur in 332. 191 (vox clamantis = clypiende stemr), 338. 33 (vir videns deum = ðæt is on Engliscr spræce: se wer ðe god gesihð), xxiii. B. 280 (putans = smeagende), xxiii. B. 287 (reducens = hæbbende).

ÆLFRIC'S DE VETERI ET DE NOVO TESTAMENTO (41).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (15).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (5).

NSM. (4):—18. 32: he bifiende feoll to 1. fotum (or pred.?)—20. 24: Bellatores . . . ure burga healdæs . . . feohende mid wæmnum; liþbende (lybbende): 2. 26, 12. 40.

DPM. (1):—5. 34: [mête] him ælce ðæg com edniwe of heofenum feowertig wintra fyrst on ðam westene farende.
II. With an Object (10).

NSM. (7):—18. 33: he ... feoll to l. fotum ... biddende miltsunige.—Other examples:—16. 32: bodigende (or pred.?); 16. 10: cweðende; 16. 30: lærende; 20. 10: seegende; wyrcende (wyrscende): 15. 23, 16. 30.

NPM. (3):—19. 45: ðær ðær hig blissiað andbidiende git ðæs ecan lifes; heriende: 5. 28, 8. 27.

B. The Preterite Participle (26).

I. Without an Object (26).

NSM. (13):—2. 9, 10: Her is seo halige ðrinnis on ðisum ðrim mannum ... se ... fæder of nanum ðrum gecumen, and se miola wisdom of ðam wisan fæder æfre ... acenned.—Other examples:—3. 25: adrencead; 13. 40: ahangen; 3. 2: awend; 2. 44: gefæstnod; gehaten: 9. 20, 11. 4; 11. 5: gelyfed; 17. 24: gestrangod; 12. 34: gedogen; 18. 33: ofergoten; 18. 34: ofseceanod.

NPM. (3):—20. 20: Laboratores sind yrðlingas and æhte men to ðam anum betæhte etc. So: 20. 22.

NPF. (2):—14. 12: ðæt syndon ðreo bec mid lufe afyllede folce to lare; 11. 21: gehatene.

DSM. (1):—16. 24: binnan anum igoðe feor on wræciseðe, Pathmos gehaten.

ASM. (4):—3. 23: se acwealde his broðor Abel gehaten unscoildigne mannan. So gehaten = acc. sing. masc.: 7. 18, 8. 20, 11. 9.

ASF. (1):—15. 44: he awrat ða boc on his wræciseðe Apocalipsis gehaten.

ASN. (2):—7. 341&2: He æræde ... ðæt ... tempel ... swa fægere getimbrod and swa fieste getrymmed; 7. 35: oferworht.

II. With an Object (0).

No example.
ÆLFRIC’S HEPTATEUCH (99).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (61).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (25).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (15):—

NSM. (9):—Judges 4. 20: gif her ænig man cume acsi-
gende embe me = cum venerit aliquis interrogans te (or pred.).—Gen. 19. 14: Ða wæs him geðuht, swilce he:
gamnigende spræce = Et visus est eis quasi ludens loqui.—
Other examples:—ingangende = ingrediens: Deut. 28. 6¹, 
19¹; Num. 22. 34: nitende = nesciens; Gen. 15. 17: smo-
ciende = fumans (or attrib.?); Num. 16. 48: standende =
stans; utgangende = egrediens: Deut. 28. 6², 19².

NSN. (2):—Ex. 2. 23: Israela bearn clypode geomriende
for ðam weorcum = ingemiscientes filii Israel propter opera
vociferati sunt; Job. 1. 19: hroesende = corruens.

NPM. (3):—Judges 15. 14: urnon him toeanes ealle
hlydende = Et cum Philisthiim vociferantes occurrissent ei (or
pred.?).—Other examples:—Ex. 1. 7¹: spryttende = germi-
nantes; Num. 16. 18: standende = stantes.

NPN. (1):—Gen. 8. 3: Ða waeteru ða gecirdon of ðære
eorðan ongean farende = Reversæque sunt aquæ de terra
euntes et redeuntes.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in
immediate connection with an appositive participle (5):—

NSM. (1):—Gen. 22. 3: Abraham ða aras on ðære ylcan
nihte and ferde mid twam cnapum to ðam fyrlenum lande
and Isaac samod on assum ridende = Igitur Abraham de
nocte consurgens stravit asinum suum, ducens secum duos
juvenes et Isaac filium suum abiit in locum.

NPM. (4):—Num. 14. 45: and big micelum slogan and
chtende adrifon = et percutiens eos atque occidens persecutus
est eos.—Other examples:—Num. 20. 30: beweopon geomeri-
ende = flevit (there is an ap. ptc. in the sentence); Josh. 8. 16: hrymdon ridende = vociferantes persecuti sunt eos; Job 2. 12: hrymdon wepende = exclamantes ploraverunt.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):
   NSF. (1):—Gen. 24. 63: He eode ut on sæt land. Sæcende = Et egressus fuerat ad meditandum in agro.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (4):

II. WITH AN OBJECT (36).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (25):
   NSF. (5):—Gen. 18. 12: (Sarra) hloh digellice, ðus cweðende = Benedixitque eis dicens. So cweðende = dicens: Gen. 2. 16, 8. 15, 17. 17; Ex. 3. 16, 5. 6; Deut. 32. 48, 34. 4.—Other examples:—Job 1. 8: yfel forbugende = recedens a malo; Job 1. 8: ondrcedende = timens; Job (Exposition), p. 266, l. 20: secende = quæres (for Latin cf. I. Peter 5. 8); Gen. 2. 6: weatriende = irrigans.

   NSF. (1):—Judges 6. 7: Swa Israela folc ða earmlice clipode to ðam ... gode, his helpes biddende = Et clamavit Israel ad dominum, postulans auxilium.

   NSF. (1):—Gen. 3. 5: ge beoð ñonne englum gelice witende ægþer ge god ge yfel = et eritis sicut dii, scientes bonum et malum.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 209

ASF. (1):—Gen. 1. 12\(^1\): seor$e for$e ateah growende wirte and sead berende be hire cinne = protulit terra herbam virentem et facientem semen juxta genus suum.

ASN. (4):—Gen. 1. 11\(^1\)*2: Spritte seor$e growende gærs and sead wircende and æppebære treow væstm wircende æfter his cinne = Germinet terra herbam virentem et facientem semen et lignum pomiferum faciens fructum juxta genus suum; ib. Gen. 1. 12\(^2\); Gen. 1. 12\(^3\): hæbbende = habens.

APF. (1):—Gen. 1. 29: ic forgeaf eow eall gærs and wyrta sead berende ofer eor$an = dedi vobis omnem herbam afferentem semen super terram.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually either subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):

NSM. (1):—Deut. 4. 45: . . . æ, Æe Moises foresette and laga and domas, ðus ewe$ende = . . . lex, quam proposuit M., et . . . judicia quae locutus est.

NSF. (1):—Josh. 10. 6: Da sende seo burhwaru . . . to Iosue biddende ðæt etc. = miserunt ad Iosue et dixerunt ei.

ASN. (1):—Deut. 11. 25: Ge . . . gehirdon his word, ðus ewe$ende = . . . et locutus est vobis.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (8):


B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (38).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (38).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (11):—
NPM. (3):—Num. 15. 44: Hig swa ðeah ablende beotlice astigon = At illi contenebrati ascenderunt.—Other examples:—Ex. 1. 7: *gestrangode = roborati*; Num. 16. 33: ofhore ne = operti.

ASM. (3):—Gen. 22. 13: gesœah ðær anne ramm betwux ðam bremelum be ðam hornum gehast = viditque ... arietem inter vepres harentem cornibus (or pred.?).—Other examples:—Ex. 9. 24: hagol wið fyhr gemenged = mista; Ex. 29. 23: gesprengedne = conspersae.

ASN. (2):—Ex. 12. 8: And eþon ealle ðæt flæsc on fyre gebroðd = Et edent carnes nocte illa assas igni;—Ex. 12. 9: gesoden = coctum aqua.

APM. (1):—Levit. 2. 4: Bring clæne ofenbacene hlafas mid ele geasmirede = panes conspersos oleo.

APN. (2):—Ex. 31. 18: He sealde Moise twa stœnene wexbreda mid godes handa agrafene = duas tabulas lapideas scriptas digito dei; Gen. 41. 6: forscruncene = percussae.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):—

NSN. (1):—Judges 16. 4: Hine beswac swa ðeah siððan an wif, Dalila gehaten = Post hæc amavit mulierem, quæ vocabatur Dalila.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (2):—

NPM. (2):—Ex. 12. 19: ne ete ge nan ðing onhafenes, ne utan cymene ne innan lande geborene = tam de adventis quam de indigenis terrae.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (1):—

NSM. (1):—Judges 13. 2: An man wæs eardigende on Israhela ðeode, Manue gehaten = Erat autem quidam vir nomine Manue.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):—
NPM. (1):—Ex. 4. 31: and hig gebædon hig to gode nywel astrehte on corðan = et proni adoraverunt.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (22):


NSF. (1):—Gen. 21. 6: ofwundrod.

NSN. (1):—Num. 16. 34: afirht.


DSM. (4):—Judges 6. 1: ʒam ... leodscipe Madian ge- eweden; Judges 4. 2: sumum ... cininge Iabin gehaten; Judges 16. 23: heora gode, Dagon gehaten; Judges (Epilogue), p. 264, l. 32: on ʒam mielan ea, Eufrates gehaten.

DSF. (1):—Judges 16. 1: to anre birig, Gaza gehaten.

DPM. (1):—Judges 16. 7: mid seofon rapum of sinum geworhte.


II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

ANGLO-SAXON HOMILIES AND LIVES OF SAINTS, I. (89).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (49).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (25).

NSF. (2):—1. 24: Deos is seo halige ŝrynnys, ŝe ealle ŝing gesceop, on anre godecundnysse ëfre wunigende.—So: 3. 130.

NSN. (2):—3. 437: Sum ... wif ... his fet aðwoh and gelome hi cyste, liegende æt his fotum; 9. 80: wunigende.

NPM. (11):—6. 113: ... gif we her nu swincâ, feohlende mid geleafan wið leahtras.—Other examples:—9. 357: hlydende; libbende: 7. 6, 9. 60; 9. 61: swyltende; truyigende: 9. 88, 9. 350²; wunigende: 3. 132, 3. 527, 6. 66, 9. 133.

NPN. (1):—3. 324: Ŝeah ŝe hi [≡ mædenu] clæne beon on maeghâde lybbende.

NP. M. or F. (1):—3. 12: lybbende.

DPM. (1):—7. 151: [mete] heom ælce dæge com edniwe of heofenum xl wintra fyrst on ŝam wæstene farende.

ASM. (1):—9. 330: ac ... he asende me ongean on his sige blissigende and on eowre alysednysse.

APM. (1):—9. 103: god hi ña gelædde ... ealle ofer ña ... sæ, siðigende be ŝam grunde.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (24).

NSM. (4):—1. 304: se ... lareow lærde us ñus cweðende.—Other examples:—4. 55: secende; seegeende: 3. 181, 3. 531.

NSF. (3):—8. 176: heo ... fieste, biddende æt gode, ñæt etc.—Other examples:—9. 318: cweðende; 9. 417: Ŝeowigende (w. dat.).

NSN. (2):—9. 111: Ñæt godes folc ña eode upp be ŝam grunde, herigende heora drihten; 3. 479: singende.


APM. (1):—2. 117: Iohannes ... geseah Crist standan and ñone clænan floce mid him, hundteontig ñusenda and
feower and feowertig ðusenda, swiðe hlude singende ðone heofonlican sang.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (40).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (40).

NSM. (13):—1. 67: he us alysde... mid his agenum deaðe, on rode ahangen.—Other examples:—7. 28: avend; gehaten: 5. 9; 8. 2, 78, 127; 9. 193; 8. 268: gehathyrt; 9. 194: gelyfed; 7. 23: ifæstnod; ihaten: 7. 214, 287; 7. 288: ifyleđ.

NSF. (3):—9. 207: heo fæste symle buton on freolsdagum, mid heran gescryd to hire lice æfre.—Other examples:—7. 61: aþwogen; 3. 27: gesceapan.

NSN. (4):—3. 349: Iacobes wif, Rachel geçigel, twentig wintra wunode etc.—Other examples:—3. 334: gehaten; 8. 149: tostenced; 3. 95: ungewemmed.


NPF. (1):—7. 302: Twa beo beoð isette... machabeorum ihatene.

DSM. (1):—3. 25: And eac his godecundyss was on ðære menniscynsse to anum soðan Criste of hyre acenned, æfre unbegunnen on ðære godecundyssse.

DSF. (1):—2. 114: on his gastlican gesihðe, Apocalipsis gehaten.

DSN. (1):—3. 362: mid his wife, Elisabeth genamod.


ASF. (1):—9. 9: towænde se cyning heora... burh, Hierusalem gehaten.
II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

**ANGLO-SAXON HOMILIES AND LIVES OF SAINTS, II. (22).**

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (16).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (11).

NSM. (2):—15. 353: ic hit *unwillende* do; 10. 90: *scamiende*.


NPF. (1):—15. 51: hire fostermoder hi het gan mid oðrum fæmnum on feld, sceap to hawienne, and hi swa dydo[n] *spinnende*.

APM. (2):—15. 242\(^1\&2\): Sume ic *slæpende* beswac and sume eac *wacigende* = 19. 265: Et cum *dormiunt*, venio super eos et excito illos a somno.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (5).

NSM. (4):—15. 52: Ða ferde Olibrius to Anthiochiam, *axiende* etc.; *cweðende*: 18. 57, 80, 109.

DSM. (1):—11. 16: *Audiens* ex ore meo sermonem meum, adnuntiabis eis ex me, non ex te. Ðæt is on urum geðeode: Of minum muðe *gehlystendum* [for gehlystende by attraction to muðe?] ðu bodast hym mine spræce of me, næs of ðe.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (6).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (5).

NSM. (1):—15. 12: wæs sum hæðen cyninge, Theodosius *gehaten*. 
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 215

NSF. (1):—15. 44: heo cwæð: ic eom ūn ēow [sic.] elea and ungewæmmes.

NSN. (1):—16. 55: big hym dryncan sealdon, sæt wæs wyn and eced gemenged toegædere.

NPM. (1):—12. 45: hwilum willes, hwilum geneadode gewuniað of to drincanne.

ASF. (1):—15. 45: ðe ic me beteæe ungewæmmode.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—17. 23: ic eam of Grecane rice and ic of Judean wæs, ðan Pontiscen Pilate underēowald.

Note: Latin Participles.—Latin participles occur in 11. 16 (quoted under dative above), in 13. 13 (sciens = śa wiste se hælend), in 13. 59 (sciens = He wiste), and in 18. 68 (et videns filium etc. = no A.-S. equivalent). Again in no. 19, which is entirely in Latin and which is the basis, though not the literal equivalent, of no. 15 (Anglo-Saxon), about 55 appositive participles occur; but, as no one of these is translated by an appositive participle in Old English, it seems unnecessary to cite them.

GOSPELS1 (280).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (237).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (115).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (107):—

5, 15. 29, 17. 17; Mk. 1. 35: arisende = surgens; L. 5. 3°: astigende = ascendens; Mk. 7. 34: behealdende = suspiciens; L. 3. 18: bodigende = exhortans; Mk. 1. 7: bugende = procumbens; clyiende = clamans: Mk. 15. 39, L. 23. 46°: ib. = exclaimans: Mk. 1. 26°; Mat. 12. 44: cumende = veniens; Mk. 9. 20: femende = spumans; Mat. 4. 9: feallende = cadens; gangende = ambulans: Mat. 14. 25 (or pred.?), Mk. 6. 48 (or pred.?); ib. = transiens, L. 12. 37; L. 15. 5: geblissiende = gaudens; Mk. 1. 31: genealveoende = accedens; hrymende = clamans: Mk. 5. 5 (or pred.?), 5. 7; ib. = exclaimans: Mk. 9. 26°, L. 8. 28; ingan(c)gende = ingressus: Mk. 1. 21, L. 1. 28; lærende = docens: Mat. 4. 23, 9. 35°, Mk. 12. 35; L. 17. 24: lyhtende = coruscans; L. 5. 3b: sittende = sedens; Mk. 7. 33: spetende = expuens; L. 4. 39: standende = stans; Mk. 15. 30: stigende = descendens; L. 1. 78: upspringende = oriens; utgangende = egressus: Mk. 1. 45, L. 4. 42.

NSF. (3):—L. 2. 38: And ἰεος ἕαε τιδε becumende drihtne andette = Et hæ, ipsa hora superveniens, confitebatur Domino.—Other examples:—L. 2. 19: smeagende = conferens; L. 2. 37: ἕεωγιγε = serviens.

NSN. (4):—Mk. 5. 33° & b. Dæt wif Æa ondredende & forhtigende com & astrehte hi = Mulier vero timens et tremens . . . venit et procidit; gangende = introiens: Mk. 7. 15, 17. 18.

NPM. (30):—Mk. 15. 31: heahsacerdas bysmriende betwux Æam bocerum cwædon = sacerdotes illudentes . . . dicebant.—Other examples:—Mk. 7. 1: cumende = venientes; L. 22. 65: dysigende = blashphemantes; L. 2. 16: efstende = festinantes; Mk. 16. 20: farende = projecti; gangende = intrantes, Mat. 2. 11; ib. = incedentes, L. 1. 6; gehyrende = audientes: Mat. 13. 13°, Mk. 4. 12°, L. 8. 10°; geseende = videntes: Mk. 4. 12°, L. 8. 10°; Mk. 11. 24: gyrmende = orantes; Mat. 9. 27: hrymynde = clamantes; Mat. 12. 45: ingangende = intrantes; Mat. 5. 11: leogende = mentientes; lociende = videntes: Mat. 13. 13°, 13. 14; L. 2. 48: sari
gende = dolentes; Mat. 27. 36: sittende = sedentes; Mat. 17.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 217

3: sprecende = loguentes; Mat. 6. 5: standende = stantes; Mk. 6. 32: stigende = ascendentia; L. 5. 5: swincende = laborantes; utgangende (utgangynde) = exeuntia: Mat. 8. 28, 9. 31, Mk. 3. 6, 6. 12; L. 20. 26: wundrigende = mirati; L. 22. 44: yrnende = decurrentis.

NPN. (1):—Mat. 8. 32: hig [= ða deofla] ða utgangende ferdoii on ða swin = At illi exeuntia abierunt in porcos.

NDM. (1):—L. 24. 17: hwæt synt ða spæca ðe gyt recoeð inc betwynan gangende? = Qui sunt hi sermones quos confertis ad invicem ambulantes?

GPM. (1):—L. 18. 7: Soðlice ne deð God his gecorenra wræce clypiendra to him dæges & nihtes = Deus autem non faciet vindictam electorum suorum clamantium ad se die ac nocte.

GPN. (1):—L. 8. 32: And ðær wæs micel heord swyna on ðam munte læsiendra = Erat . . . grex porcorum . . . pascentium in monte.

DSN. (1):—Mat. 13. 47b: Eft is heofena rice gelic asendum nette on ða sæ & of sæcum fisc-cynne gadrigendum = Iterum simile est regnum caelorum sagenæ missæ in mare, et ex omni genere piscium congreganti.

DPM. (5):—L. 6. 17: And mid him farendum he stod on feldlice stowe = Et descendens cum illis stetit in loco campestri. [Or shall we emend farendum to farende in accordance with the Latin? ]—Other examples:—Mk. 9. 42: gelyfendum = credentibus; Mk. 16. 10a: heofendum = lugentibus; Mat. 11. 16: sittendum = sedentibus; Mk. 16. 10b: wependum = flentibus.

DPM. (2):—L. 7. 32*a b: Hi sint gelice cildum on strete sittendum & specendum betwux him = Similes sunt pueris sedentibus in foro, et loquentibus ad invicem.

ASM. (4):—Mk. 15. 21: & genyddon sumne wegferendne simonem cireneum cumende of ðam tune . . . ðæt he etc. = Et angariaverunt prettereuntem quempiam, Simonem Cyreneum venientem de villa etc.—Other examples:—J. 1. 9:
ou mendne = venientem; L. 17. 7ª: ere endne = ar antem; Mat. 9. 2: lie gendne = jac endem.

ASN. (1):—L. 6. 38ª: god gemet & full geheaped and oferflowende higyllað = mensuram, bonam . . . et supereffluentem dabunt.

APM. (1):—Mat. 4. 24: yfeihæbbende = male habentes.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (2):

NSM. (2):—Mk. 11. 17: & he ða lærende ðus cwæð = Et docebat, dicens eis.—Mat. 26. 27ª: And he genam ðone calic þanciende & sealde hym ðus eweðende = Et accipiens calicem, gratias eigit, et dedit illis, dicens.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (2):

NSM. (2):—L. 15. 13: & forspilde ðar his æhta, lybbende on his gelsan = et ibi dissipavit substantiam suam vivendo luxuriose;—L. 12. 25 : ðenciende = cogitando.


NSM. (1):—Mk. 9. 24: wepende cwæð = cum lacrymis aiebat.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative absolute clause (1):

NSM. (1):—L. 6. 20: Þa cwæð se hælend beseonde to his learning-enihtum = Et ipse elevatis oculis in discipulos suos, dicebat.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):

NSM. (1):—Mk. 5. 40: He . . . ineode swigende (Hat. MS.) ðar ðæt mæden wæs = Ipse . . . ingreditur ubi etc.

NSF. (1):—L. 2. 51: And his modor geheold ealle ðas word on hyre heortan smeagende = Et mater ejus conservabat omnia verba in corde suo. [Cf. L. 2. 19, where smeagende = conferens.]
II. WITH AN OBJECT (122).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (117):

NSM. (57)—Mk. 1. 41: & his hand aðenode & hine aðrinende [Hat. MS. æthrinede] & ðus cwæð = extendit manum suam, et tangens eum, ait illi.—Mat. 10. 5*: ðas twelf se h. sende, him bebeodende = Hos duodecim misit J., præcipiens eis.—L. 3. 3: he com into eall iordanes rice bodiende dædbote fulluht & synna forgynesse = venit in omnem regionem Iordanis, prædicans baptismum pœnitentiae in remissionem peccatorum (or pred.?). So bodi(g)ende = prædicans in: Mat. 9. 35*, Mk. 1. 14 (or pred.?); = evangelizans in L. 8. 1* (or pred.?).—Mat. 9. 18: & ge-eaðmedde hyne to him, ðus cwæðende = et adorabat eum, dicens. So cwæðende (cwæðende) = dicens in: Mat. 8. 6, 9. 29, 9. 30, 10. 5*, 13. 3, 13. 31, 26. 27*, 26. 44, 27. 11; Mk. 1. 15 (or pred.?), 9. 25; L. 23. 46; J. 1. 15, 1. 32.—Other examples:—L. 5. 13 (MS. A): aðenigende = extendens; behealdende = circumspiciens, Mk. 3. 34; ib. = intuitus, Mk. 10. 21; Mk. 14. 13: berende = bajulans; Mk. 3. 5*: besceawiende = circumspiciens; Mk. 10. 23: besœnde hine = circumspiciens (without object);—biddende = rogans, Mat. 8. 5; ib. = dcccans, Mk. 1. 40; bletsiende = benedicens, Mk. 14. 22, L. 1. 64; Mk. 5. 5: ceorflende = concidens (or pred.?); J. 6. 6: ðandigende his = tentans eum; Mk. 8. 13: forleætende = dimittens; Mat. 9. 12: gehyrende = audiens; gesœonde = videns, Mk. 9. 15*, L. 1. 12 (no obj. in Latin); L. 14. 7: gyomende = intendens; habende = habens: Mk. 3. 1, 9. 47, L. 4. 33, 7. 8*; Mat. 9. 35*: hælende = curans; L. 17. 15: mærsiende = magnificans; L. 4. 40: onsettende = imponens; L. 8. 1*: predicende = prædicans (or pred.?); secende = quaerens: Mat. 12. 43, L. 11. 24, 13. 7 (or pred.?);—L. 3. 16: secærende = dicens; Mk. 10. 16: settende = imponens; slitende = discerpens, Mk. 1. 26*, 9. 26*; ib. = scindens, Mk. 14. 63; L. 10. 30: upbesœonde hine = suscipiens (no object); L. 18. 43: wuldrigende
MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

= magnificans; L. 24. 12\(^b\): wundrigende sēns = mirans quod (or pred.?).

NSF. (4):—Mat. 20. 20\(^a\&b\): Ğa com to him zebedeis bearna modor mid hyre bearnum hig ge-eadmedende & sum sēnge fram mid biddende = Tunc accessit ... mater, adorans et petens aliquid ab eo.—Other examples:—J. 11. 28: cwe-șende = dicens; Mk. 19. 8: gehyrende = audientes.

NSN. (3):—L. 2. 23: sēt ælc wepned gecynd-lim ontyndende byð drihtne halig genenmd = Quia omne masculinum adaperiens vulsam, sanctum Domino vocabitur.—Other examples:—Mk. 7. 19: eænsigende = purgans; L. 7. 29*: gehyrende = audiens.

NPM. (36):—Mk. 1. 5: & wæron ... gefullode ...; hyra syna andetende (MS. A.) = et baptizabantur ..., con-ṣitentes peccata sua.—Other examples:—Mk. 6. 55: befarenende = percurrentes; Mk. 2. 3: berende = ferentes (or pred.?); L. 24. 53\(^b\): bleṣisigende = benedicentes (or pred.?); Mat. 19. 3: costnigende hine = tentantes eum;—cweṣende = dicentes in: Mat. 6. 31, 8. 25, 9. 27, 10. 7, 10. 12, 12. 10, 12. 38, 27. 23, 27. 29, Mk. 3. 11, J. 11. 31;—demende = judicantes: Mat. 19. 28, L. 22. 30 (or both pred.?); fundi(g)ende his = tentantes eum: Mk. 10. 2, J. 8. 6; L. 24. 52: gebiddende = orantes (no obj. in Latin); L. 6. 35: gehihtende = sperantes; gehyrende = audientes: L. 4. 28, 8. 15; L. 20. 11: gewecende = afficientes; Mk. 7. 3: healdende = tententes; heriende (her-gende) = laudantes: L. 2. 20\(^b\) (or pred.?), 24. 53\(^b\) (or pred.?); L. 20. 47: hiwende = simulantes; secende = quærentes: Mat. 12. 46, 12. 47, L. 11. 54; ib. = requirentes: L. 2. 45; Mk. 7. 13: tosilende = rescindentes; L. 23. 10: wregende = accusantes (or pred. ?); L. 2. 20\(^a\): wuldriende = glorificantes (or pred.?).

NPF. (3):—Mat. 9. 33: șa menigeo wundredon cweșende = mirare sunt turbæ, dicentes.—Other examples:—Mat. 15. 31\(^a\): gesæende = videntes; Mat. 15. 30: țæbbende = habentes.

NPN. (4):—Mat. 8. 31: șa deofla soðlice hyne bædon, șus cweșende = Dæmones autem rogabant eum, dicentes. So cweșende = dicentia in L. 4. 41\(^b\).—Other examples: L. 4.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 221

41*: hrymende = clamantia; Mat. 27. 55: ßenigende him = ministrantes ei.

NP. M. or N. (1):—L. 23. 49: cuðan & wif geseonde = videntes.

NDM. (1):—Mk. 11. 5: Hwæt do gyt ðone folan untingende? = Quid facitis solventes pullum?

DSM. (2):—L. 6. 48: He ys gelic timbriendum men his hus = Similis est homini ædificanti domum. Cf. L. 6. 49: He is gelic ðam timbriendan men his hus ofer ða eorðan = similis est homini ædificanti domum etc.

DPN. (1):—L. 7. 32*: Hi synt gelicé cildum ... evedendum = Similes sunt puereis ... dicentibus.

ASM. (5):—Mat. 8. 17: ßæt ware gefyldæ ßæt gecewedæ is ðurh essaæm ðone witegan, ðus evedende = Ut adimpleretur quod dictum est per Isaiah prophetam, dicentem. So evedende = dicentem in Mat. 12. 17, 27. 9.—Other examples:
—Mk. 9. 17: ḣæbbende = habentem; L. 17. 7*: læsegendne = pascentem.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is generally either subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):

NSM. (1):—Mat. 14. 19: beseah on ðone heofon & blestigende bræc ða hlafas = adspiciens in cœlum benedixit et fregit ... panes.

NSF. (1):—L. 18. 5: ðe-læs heo æt neahstan cume me behropende = ne in novissimo veniens sugillet me (or pred.?).

NPM. (1):—Mk. 9. 15*: & hine grettende him to urnon = et accurrentes salutabant eum.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):

NSM. (1):—Mat. 22. 35: axode hyne & fandode hys ðus evedende = Et interrogavit eum unus ex eis legis doctor, tentans eum.

NSF. (1):—J. 12. 28: ða com stefn of heofone ðus evedende = Venit ergo vox de cælo.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (43).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (36).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (34):

NSM. (14).—Mk. 14. 51 : Sum iungling him fyligde mid anre scytan bewefed nacod & hi namon hine = Adolescens autem quidam sequebatur eum amictus sindone super nudo.—Mk. 5. 30 : he cwæð bewend to šære menigu = conversus ad turbam aiebat. So bewend = conversus: L. 7. 9, 10. 23, 14. 25, 23. 28.—Other examples:—Mk. 9. 20 : forgnyden = elisus; Mk. 5. 4 : gebunden = vincitus; Mat. 2. 22 : gemynegod = admonitus; gesett = constitutus: Mat. 8. 9, L. 7. 8*; Mk. 3. 5b : geunret = contristatus; L. 22. 32 : gewend = conversus; Mat. 25. 25 : ofdræd = timens (or pred.).

NSF. (1).—Mat. 14. 8 : Da cwæð heo fram hyre meder gemynegod = At illa præmonita a matre sua . . . inquit.

NSN. (2).—L. 11. 17 : Æle rice on hyt sylf todaeled byð toworpen = Omne regnum in se ipsum divisum desolabitur.—L. 10. 15 : upahafen = exaltata.

NPM. (5).—L. 1. 74 : ßæt we butan ege of ure seonda handa alysedes him ßeowian = Ut sine timore, de manu . . . liberati, serviamus illi.—Other examples:—gefullede (gefulledæ) = baptizati, L. 7. 29*, 7. 30; L. 9. 31 : gesewene = visi; Mat. 7. 6 : gevende = conversi.

NPN. (1).—Mat. 26. 47 : ßa com iudas . . . & micel folc mid hym mid swurdum & sahulum asendum fram . . . ealdrum = ecce Judas . . . venit, et cum eo turba multa cum gladiis et fustibus, missi a principibus etc.

DSN. (1).—Mat. 13. 47* : Eft is heofena rice gelic asendum nette on ßa sæ = Iterum simile est regnum cœlorum sagene missæ in mare.

ASM. (7).—Mk. 16. 6 : ge secað ßæne nazareniscan hælend ahangenne = Jesum quæritis Nazarenum, crucifixum.—Other examples:—Mat. 27. 37 : awrittenne = scriptam; Mk.
15. 17: awundenne = plectentes; Mk. 15. 15: beswungenne = caeum; L. 23. 16: gebetne = emendatum; Mat. 27. 16: gehæfte = vincum; L. 7. 25: gescrydne = indutum.

ASF. (1):—L. 22. 12: he eow betsecS mycele healle gedcefte = ipse ostendet vobis cœnaculum magnum stratum.

ASN. (2):—L. 6. 38: god gemet & full geheapod ... hig syllaS = mensuram bonam, et confertam et coagitatam ... dabunt; Mat. 27. 34: gemenged = mixtum.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):—

ASM. (1):—L. 20. 15: hig hine of Sam wingearde awurpon ofselegen = ejectum illum extra vineam occiderunt.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):—

NSF. (1):—L. 1. 28: hal wes ðu mid gyfe gefylded = Ave, gratia plena (or subst.).

II. WITH AN OBJECT (7).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (7):—

NSM. (1):—Mk. 9. 31: & ofslagen ðam ðriddan dæge he arist = et occisus tertia die resurget.

DSF. (1):—L. 1. 27: ðæs asend gabriel ... to bewed-dudre fæmnan anum were ðæs nama ðæs iosep =. . . ad virginem desponsatam viro cui nomen erat J.

ASM. (3):—Mat. 11. 8: oððe hwæ eode ge ut geseon mann hnescum gyrlum gescrydyne? = Sed quid existis videre? hominem mollibus vestitum? So gescrydyne = indutum: L. 23. 11; Mk. 16. 5: oferworhne = co-opertum.

ASN. (1):—Mat. 11. 7: Hwi eode ge ut on wesðen geseon winde awegyd hreod? = Quod existis in desertum videre? arundinem vento agitatam?

APM. (1):—Mat. 4. 24: hi brohton him ealle yfel-hæbbende, misseenlicum adlum & on tintegrum gegrípene =
Note: Examples of Participles hitherto cited as Appositive.

A. Erdmann (p. 26) considers bebeodende appositive in Matthew 11.1 (hvit was geworden sa se hælynd sys ge-endude hys twelf learning-cnihtum bebeodende he for sanun = factum est, quum consummasset Jesus precipiens duodecim discipulis suis, transiit inde), and that sys is the object of bebeodende; while Mätzner (III., p. 70) and March ($§$ 458) seem to hold that the participle here is used substantively and is the object of ge-endude. To me, however, neither of these views seems tenable; I take sys to be the object of bebeodende and the participle to be used predicatively after the intransitive verb of ending, as is common in Greek (cf. Goodwin, Gr. Grammar, § 1578) and as occurs in the Greek of this verse.

Again, Erdmann (p. 28) holds that gangende is appositive in Luke 9.34 (hi ondredon him ganende on set genip = timuerunt, intrantibus illis in nubem); but, as I have since tried to show (Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 13), the participle is more probably a crude absolute dative.

According to Erdmann (p. 28) ahsiente is possibly appositive in Mark 9.32 (hi adredon hine ahsiente = timebant interrogare eum), while Mätzner (III., p. 70) and March ($§$ 458) appear to look upon ahsiente as the substantival object of adredon. For several reasons, however, I believe that ahsiente is to be emended to ahsienne, which latter is the infinitive object of adredon. (1) We know that this confusion of infinitive and participial forms occurs in the Gospels (cf. above Mk. 1.5, where I give MS. A.'s andetende instead of the Corpus anddetenne). (2) We find the verb ondredan governing an inflected infinitive as direct object (cf. Mat. 1.20, 2.22, both cited by Erdmann). (3) ahsienne would correspond better with the infinitive of the Latin (and Greek) than would ahsiente.
In *Luke* 9. 55, Professor Bright, following MSS. B. and C., reads: *hine bewend, he hig ñreade (= *conversus increpavit illos*), in which case *bewend* would be appositive. But, as we have no other instance in the Gospels of the past participle (*bewend*) governing an accusative, it seems better to read, with the remaining MSS., *bewende (bewente).* The Lindisfarne and Rushworth Glosses likewise have a finite verb here. For the other occurrences of *bewend* in the Gospels, see NSM. under B, r., 1 above.

**WULFSTAN (28).**

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (9).

I. Without an Object (3).

NSM. (1):—244. 7: ñæt is fæder and sunu and halig gast and is an soð god *rixigende* and gemende ealra his gesceaftra a butan ende.

NPM. (1):—295. 14: hi sculon *fleonde* on gefeohete beon ofslagene.

NPN. (1):—236. 26: and ña deoflu wendon *sceamigende* aweg.

II. With an Object (6).

NSM. (5):—199. 15: be ñam awrat Iohannes . . . ñus *cweôende*. *Ib.* 201. 8, 246. 11, both immediately before a Latin quotation. [Only one other example of *cweôende* occurs in Wulfstan (see 105. 30 under NPM.). Wulfstan translates *dicens (dicentes)* twice by a co-ordinated finite verb (60. 14, 87. 15) and once by a subordinated finite verb (87. 18), while twice he leaves it untranslated (31. 32, 77. 3).]—244. 7b: ñæt is fæder and sunu and halig gast and is an soð

*The past participle must however certainly be allowed to govern the accusative. I should still regard *hine bewend* as a servile translation of *conversus*, and the readings of Corp. and A. as representing steps in revision.—J. W. B.*
god rixigende and *gemende* ealra his gesceafhta butan ende.—278. 9: and on *ðam* eahtoðan dæge manna gehwylc ham ferde mid fulre blisse gode ælmihtigum *sæcgende* ðære mæððe (or predicative?).

NPM. (1):—105. 30: we hine ænne offer ealle ðære lufjað and wurðjað mid gewissum geleafan cweðende etc.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (19).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (2):—25. 19: se *ðe* sæne bryne *ðurhsæð* unbesencged (or pred.?); 26. 7: gemenecged (or pred.?).

NPM. (7):—133. 5a–b: and ge tofesede swiðe afirhte oft litel werod earhlice forbugað = 131. 23: et animam ustram *tabescentem* faciam, et perseverentur uos inimici uestri, et fugietis nullo persequente.—137. 18: and we beoð him ðonne feringa beforan brohte æghwanon cumene to his ansyne.—Other examples:—*gehadode* (gehadede): 160. 1, 181. 29, 272. 21, 292. 30.

ASF. (5):—263. 4, 5, 6a–b: *ðeah* *ðe* ða nihtegestan and ða ricestan hatan him reste gewyrcan of marmanstane and mid goldfretwum and mid gimcynnum eal *aestrend* and mid seol-frenum ruwum and godwebbe eall *oferwirgen* and mid deor-wyrðum wyrtgemengnessum eal *gestreded* and mid goldleafum *gestrewed* ymbutan; 163. 6: *gewylede*.

AP. M. or F. (1):—46. 7: wa eow, he ðæs, ðe lecgæs togæedere hamas and æhta on unriht *begytene* on æghwilce healfæ.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—48. 3: and forðam he sceal drefan dimne and deopne hellewites grund, helps æledæled.

NPM. (3):—256. 12a–b, c: ac gewītæ fram me, wuldre bedælede, freondum afyrede, freondum betæhte in ðam hatan wylme hellefyres.
Note: Latin Participles in Wulfstan.—Thirty-four Latin participles occur in Wulfstan. Of these, twelve are untranslated (adorantes, 175. 14; audientes (twice), 42. 29, 47. 12; dicens (twice), 31. 32, 77. 3; egressus, 87. 10; elevatus, 31. 19; placentem, 31. 28; reatus, 63. 12; respondens, 87. 12; scribentes, 43. 9; sumentes, 30. 12); twelve are translated by a subordinated finite verb (accedens, 29. 11; agnoscoens, 29. 15; audiens, 190. 11; dicens, 87. 18; fallens, 50. 19; habentes, 43. 15b; ponentes (twice), 42. 25, 26; sciens, 248. 9; sperantes (twice), 43. 15, 48. 6; tabescentes, 131. 30); and nine are translated by a co-ordinated finite verb (dans, 29. 21; dicens (twice), 60. 14, 87. 15; faciens, 248. 10; respondens (respondentes) (thrice), 62. 3, 67. 23, 87. 16; reuerentes (twice), 44. 5, 49. 17).

BENET¹ (142).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (103).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (40).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (35):—

NSM. (12):—95. 10: niwan cumende (text: cumenne) sænig to gecyrednesse ne si him eðelic forgifsen ineffeird = Noviter veniens quis ad conversionem non ei facilis tribuatur ingressus. So cumende = veniens: 80. 6, 95. 13.—Other examples:—4. 8: forseonde = respuens; 36. 2b: gangende = ambulans; 116. 15: gebetende = satisfacientes; 114. 14: getruwigende = confidens; 69. 5: ingangende = ingrediens; 68. 1: lufiænde = diligens; 36. 2a: sittende = sedens; 36. 2b: standende = stans; 57. 3b: þurhþwunigende = persistens.

NSF. (1):—2. 11: utan gehyran . . . oripende hwæt us myngie stefn = audiamus . . . clamans quid nos ammoneat vox.

NSN. (1):—9. 16: ðæt forme mynstermannas ðæt is mynsterlic campiænde under regule oððe abbude = Primum
cenobitarum hoc est monasteriale militans sub regula vel abbate.

NPM. (13):—55. 7: arisende sočlice to godes weorce... gemedlice tihtan oððe laran = Surgentes vero ad opus dei invicem se moderate cohortent. So arisende (arisènde) = surgentes: 55. 4, 81. 16.—Other examples:—24. 12: droh(ti)gende = degentes; 106. 11: forahroðigende = prævenientes; 24. 11b: gangende = ambulantes; gecyrrende = revertentes: 92. 14, 93. 2; 24. 10: libbende = viventes; 6. 12: Surhwnigende = perseverantes; utgangende = exeuntes: 75. 5b, 81. 12, 93. 1.

NPM. M. or F. (1):—45. 7: gebyriende = pertinentes.

Note.—utgangendum (in 66. 15: ða utgangendum = egredientes) is either absolute or substantive; in the latter case read ða utgangendan.

GSM. (1):—25. 10: se ðe heortan his besceawað ceoriendes = qui cor ejus respicit murmurantis.

GPM. (2):—69. 1: meosan etenda gebroðrum (read gebroðra) rædinc wana beon na scell = Mensis fratum edentium lectio deesse non debet; 78. 12: utgangendre = exeuntium.

DSM. (1):—13. 9: ðæt ahwenne him na sege syngendum = nequando illi dicat deus peccanti.

DPM. (1):—118. 10: us asolcenum ð yfel lybbendum ð gimelæsum scæme gescyndnyss = nobis autem... male viventibus... rubor confusionis est.

APM. (2):—21. 7: gęðohtas ða yfelan heortan his to becumende (text becumenne) sona to christe aslidan = Cogitationes malas cordi suo adventientes mox ad christum allidere. So eumende = adventientes: 33. 5.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):

NSM. (1):—61. 6: hordere si gecoren of gegæderunge wis... na upahafen [blank] drefende = Cellarius... eligatur de congregatione sapiens... non elatus non turbulentus.

NPM. (1):—11. 2: ða... cumliðiað æfre worigende ð næfre staðolfæste = qui... hospitantur semper vagi et nunquam stables.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 229

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (3):

NSM. (3):—61. 11: forseonde hine he ne gedrefe = non spernendo eum contristet. [Cf. Benedict 1 54. 14: he ðæah mid forseawennesse hine ne geunrotsge.]—114. 10a & b: his unacumenlicnesse se ðe gewis [blank] ð gedafenlice [blank] na modigende [text: modigenne] oððe wiðstandende [blank] = impossibilitatis sue causas ei qui sibi preest patienter et opotune suggerat, non superbiendo aut resistendo vel tradicendo. [Cf. Benedict 1 128. 15, 16: ðæet he æft mid gedylle on gedafere tide his mægenleaste his ealdre gecyðe, he no ðæah na wiðstande, ne mid modignesse ne wiðcweðe.]

Note 1.—It is possible to construe forseonde, modigende, and wiðstandende above as appositive participles, but it is also possible that they may be used here precisely as the Latin gerunds are; that is, they may be verbal nouns in an oblique case instead of verbal adjectives in the nominative case. Certainly yrnende in the following is a verbal noun:

Benet 1 3. 15: . . . n ðæes rices healle on inne gyf we wyllað [blank], buton [blank] mid godum dædum yrnende nateshwon ne bið becumem = (In) cujus regni tabernaculo si volumus habitare, nisi illuc bonis actibus currendo minime pervenitur. [Cf. Benedict 3. 9: Natoðæshwow his rices eardung bið gefaren buton mid gymene and gehealdumnesse godra dæða; ofst and hradung godra weorca is to ðæm rice weges færeld.] In all probability, too, onginnende and standende, corresponding respectively to a Latin gerundive and gerund, are verbal nouns, not verbal adjectives, in the following:—

Benet 1 105. 5 & b: æfter endebyrdnesse ða ða he gesette oððe ða ða habbað ða sylfan gebroðran hi ne genealæcan [blank] to huselgange to on* sealmum ginnende on choro standende = Ergo secundum ordines quos constituerit vel quos haberint ipsi fratres si [read sic] accedant ad pacem, ad communioinem, ad psalmum imponendum, in choro standum. * [Cf.

*As Logeman (foot-note to p. 105) says, on belongs with ginnende.
Benedict¹ 115. 4, 5: ... gange ælc æfter ðœrum to cosse, to husle and be ðan on chorde stande and sealmas and gehwylce ðenunga beginne.]

Note 2.—In the following the present participle that corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative seems in use to be a pure adverb:—Benet¹ 43. 4: ðæt is ðæt sig [blank] sunge buton antempne teonde æðhwega swa swa on ðam sunnan die dege = id est, ut sexagesimus sextus psalmus dicatur sine antiphona subtrahendo modice sicut dominica. [Cf. Benedict¹ 37. 8: þæt is ðæt se syxandsyxtingaða sealm ... sy geeweden butan antefene, and he sy on svege geleneged hwæthewara ealswa on sunnandæge.]—Benet¹ 76. 3: ðane forði eallunga teonde latlice we wyllað beon gesæd = quem propter hoc omnino protrahendo et morose volumus dici. [Cf. Benedict¹ 68. 9: ðonne we eac forði on ðam sanege lenegað.]

II. With an Object (63).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (62):—

NSM. (32):—68. 1: sig hus cyte ofer hi betæht þ ðen adrædende [blank] þ luçiende = sit cella super se deputata, et servitor timens deum et diligens. [Here and occasionally at other places deum is not glossed, perhaps because of its familiarity.]—34. 6: gelyfe ... geæadmetende hine syflne = credat ... humilians se.—Other examples:—29. 11: asmaidan (MS.: asmaidan) = scrutans (or predicative?); 16. 8: behiwiende = dissimulans; 13. 8: oðrum bodiende = aliis predicans; 104. 16: brucende (MS.: brucenne) anwealde = ulens potestate; 111. 8: donde = faciens; 61. 7: drædende (MS. drædene) = timens; 31. 16: geeseleæcende = immittans; 5. 3: gefyllende = complens; 29. 3: gehyrende = audiens: 3. 1, 17. 14; 35. 2: habbende = habens; 98. 11: healdende = reservans; 31. 10: luçiende = amans; 14. 14: mængcende tidum tida = miscens temporoibus tempora; 109. 5: nimende = sumens; 2. 16: secende
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 231

\[\text{quercens; 28. 14: secende [sic!] = ponens; seegende =}
\[\text{dicens; 36. 5, 78. 10; 16. 9: taliende (MS.: taliendre) =}
\[\text{pendens; 4. 7: tihtende (MS.: tihende) = suadentem; 109. 2^a:}
\[\text{secende = cogitans; 36. 4: wenende = existimans; witende =}
\[\text{sciens: 15. 12, 19. 3, 57. 4^a, 97. 5, 103. 14; 1. 8:}
\[\text{wítewende lustum = abrenuntians voluptatibus.}

NSF. (1):—98. 6: ßæt fers eall seo gedeurung ßiriddan
\[\text{séadan togeðeodende [text: -enne] mid [blank] = Quem ver-}
\[\text{sum omnis congregatio tertio respondat adjungentes gloria}
\[\text{patri. [The A.-S. has nothing corresponding to the Latin}
\[\text{respondeat. Of course, the A.-S. participle may be plural,}
\[\text{as the Latin one is.]}

NSN. (3):—27. 2: clypað us gewritt ßæt godecunda eala
\[\text{seccende (= seegende) = Clamat nobis scriptura divina fra-}
\[\text{tres dicens. So seegende = dicens: 30. 14.—32. 7: gesutuli-}
\[\text{ende = ostendens.}

NPM. (19):—5. 16: ß gife fleonde helle wite life we wyllað
\[\text{becuman to ßam ecan = Et si fugientes gehenne poenas ad}
\[\text{vitaet volumus pervenire perpetuam.—Other examples:—}
\[\text{4. 11: ahwenende (= ah wenende?) = existimantes; 12. 14:}
\[\text{forhiéngende = contempnentes; forlaetende = relinquentes: 23.}
\[\text{16, 24. 1; ib. = deserentes: 23. 17; 32. 12: gefyllende =}
\[\text{adimplentes; 24. 11^a: gehersumiende (w. dat.) = obedientes;}
\[\text{healdende = servantes: 10. 9^b; ib. = observantes: 117. 16; 51.}
\[\text{10: myndigende = commonentes; nimende = accipientes: 92.}
\[\text{7; ib. = assertum : 109. 16; 3. 16: seegende = dicentes;}
\[\text{ðeowgende (ðeowiente) (w. dat.) = servientes: 11. 3, 67. 13;}
\[\text{109. 15^b:} wenende = estimantes; witende = scientes: 107.}
\[\text{12, 116. 4.}

GSM. (3):—31. 11: ßæs stefne drihtnes mid dædum ac he
\[\text{geefenleoce seegendès = sed vocem illum domini factis imi-}
\[\text{tetur dicentis. So seegendès = dicentis, 57. 4^b. Cf. 109. 2^b}
\[\text{(ðencende gescad ßæs halgan iacobes seegende = cogitans}
\[\text{discretionem sancti Jacob dicentis.)}

GPM. (1):—111. 5: swa hwænne swa geceost [blank]
\[\text{mid geðeahete [blank] ondæ tendrëa gode etc. = quemcumque}
\[\text{elegerit abba cum consilio fratum timentium deum.}
DSF. (1):—3. 8: est [sic] luftempre [blank] (ðiss)ere stefne [blank] gelægendre la ge ȝa leofestan gebroðran = Quid dulceius nobis (ab h)ac voce domini invitantis.

ASM. (1):—107. 7: ðæt [blank] for his leahtrum ... geðæfiendne (text: -enne) had mid gelicium geðæahte gif geçysð = Quod si etiam omnis congregatio vitii suis ... consentientem personam pari consilio elegerit.

APN. (1):—26. 14: higlista [blank] oððe idol word [blank] stirienda ... we ... fordemað = Scurilitates vero vel verba otiosa et risum moventia ... damnamus.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (1):

NSM. (1):—31. 5: ariende = pariendo.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (39).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (30).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (30):

NSM. (15):—59. 6: ðeah þe he amanumad hit ne gebet teartere genealæce ðræiungan = etiam si excommunicatus non emendaverit acrior ei accedat corretio.—Other examples:—

100. 3: bepeht (MS. bepehð) = deceptus; 68. 1º; fulfremed = sollicitus; 77. 13: geasindrod = sequestratus; 97. 17: gebeden = rogatus; 107. 14: gehadod = ordinatus; 78. 14: gehaten = iussus; 104. 6: geminegod = ammonitus; 54. 7º: geðreat = correptus; 2. 5: geyrsod = irritatus; 78. 11: pro afered = stratus; 12. 11: tolysed = absolutus; 98. 17: unscryd = exutus; upahafen = etatus: 59. 9, 61. 5.

NSF. (1):—36. 12: sona to ðære soðan lufan godes becymð to ðære fulfremed ut seo asend ege = mox ad karitatem dei perveniet illam que perfecta foras mittit timorem.

NSN. (1):—70. 17: an pund awegen genihtsumige on dege = Panis libera una propensa sufficiat in die.
II. WITH AN OBJECT (9).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (9):

NPM. (10):—10. 7: ða on ænigum regole na afandode vel [sic] oððe afundennessa lærowas ... leogan gode ... synd æcnawene = qui nulla regula approbati experientia magistri ... mentiri deo ... noscuntur.—Other examples:—

113. 9: astreht (MS.: astrehð) = prostrati; 44. 11: gecyrde = conversi; 10. 1*: gelærde = docti; 32. 14: genyddæ = angarizati; 76. 10: gesawene = visi; 75. 5*: gesette = positi; 10. 1*: getyde = instructi; 10. 9*: nexeode = molliti; 109. 15*: tobrædde = inflati.

ASM. (2):—118. 12: ðysne ðane læstan acunnednesse regol awrittenne fylstendum criste ðu gefremme = hane miniam incoationis regulam discritam adjuvante christo pericias; 20. 10: gedonne = factam.

APF. (1):—92. 15: [b]rec ðas ða ða [blank] beoð asende on hrægelhouse niman ða hi gecyrrende geðwagenu ðara agenbringer = Femuralia hi qui in via diriguntur de vestario accipient qui revertentes lota ibi restituant. [Is the -u of geðwagenu due to lotu, and is geðwagenu to be considered a neuter despite the gender of [b]rec?] 

Note.—In the following, gewunede and gedihte appear to be used as adverbs:—92. 16: cuflan ð tonican beon oðer-hwilen synd gewunede sunt [sic] habban æthwigan beteran = Cuculle et tunice sint aliquanto solito quas habent modice meliorem; 40. 11: sittendum eallum gedihte ð be endeyrd-nyssse on seamolum = residentibus cunctis dispositio et per ordinem in subselliis.
RSF. (1):—16.7: sæt he na sæt an nyðerungaæfwrðe
heorde him sylfan befaestre ðolige = ut non solum detrimenta
gregis sibi commissi non patiatur.

GPF. (1):—16.9: hæle saule him sylfan befaestra = salu-
tem animarum sibi commissarum.

DSN. (1):—57.3*: ana [blank] to weorcæ [blank] to be-
tæhtum = Solus sit ad opus sibi injunctum.

DPM. (1):—31.1: þ gif fram englum [blank] betehtum
= et si ab angelis nobis deputatis.

DPN. (1):—75.4: on ðam sylfum betehtum him sylfum
ðingum = in assignato sibi commissio.

ASM. (1):—104.4: se [blank] regol fram decanum oððe
fram pravostum him sylfan gesetne gehealden wite = qui
tamen regulam a decanis vel prepositis sibi constitutam
servare seiat.

ASF. (2):—104.15: se ne abbod gedrefe befaeste him
sylfum heorde = Qui Abbas non conturbet gregem sibi
commissam; 62.15: him betæhte = sibi commissum.

II.—IN THE POEMS.

A.—LONGER POEMS.

BEOWULF (91).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (23).

I. Without an Object (19).

NSM. (9):—2272: se ðe byrnende biorgas seccð; ib. 2569
(or pred.?): 815: wæs gehwæðer oððrum lifigende láð.—
Other examples:—2219: slepende; 2235: ðançyegende;
2548: unbyrnende; 708: waocende; 2062: wigende (or
lifigende?); 2716: wishyegende.
NSF. (1):—1953: ðær hio sīðan wel ... lifgescaefta liffigende breac.

NPM. (2):—916: Hwilum flitende fealwe stræte mearum mæton; 2850: hy seamiende scyldas beran.

N. Dual M. (1):—535: Wit ðæt gecwædon onihtwesende.

DSM. (2):—1389: ðæt bið drihtguman unliffigendan aðfer selest; 1187: gif he ðæt eal gemon, hwæt wit to willan and to worðmyndum umbor-wesendan ær arna gefremedon (or subst. here?).

ASM. (3):—2781: ligegeasan wæg hatne for horde, hiorowecalende; 372: Ic hine cuðe onihtwesendan; 46: ðæ hine æt frumsceafte forð onsendon ænne ofer yðe umbor wesende.

APM. (1):—1581: slaependæ ðræt folces Denigea fyftyne men.

II. WITH OBJECT (4).

NSM. (3):—2106: gomela Scilding fælæ fricgende feorran rehte (but Köhler considers fælæ an adverb); 2350: for ðæn he ær fælæ nearto neðende niða gedigde; 1227: Beo ðu suna minum dædum gedefæ dream healdeæ. [Should we not write dream-healdeæ, as Grein does in his Glossary? Cf. dream-hæbbendra in Genesis 81. Köhler considers healdeæ as substantivized.]

NPM. (1):—1829: Gif ic ðæt gefriege ofer floda begang, ðæt ðæc ymbesittend egesan ðywæð, swa ðæc helendæ hwilum dydon, ic ðæc ðesenda ðegna bringe, hæleða to helpe (or a substantivized participle, as Köhler holds).

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (68).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (18).

NSM. (9):—1351: oðer earmsceacen on wereæ wæstum wæcelastas træd (may be considered substantivized as by Köhler); 2569: Gewat ðæ byrnende gebogen scrīðan (or pred.?) 846: hu he ... on nicera mere fiege and geflymed
feorhlæstas bær; *ib. 1370; 2852: He gewergad sæt; 868: guma *gilphæden or attrib.?); 262: Wæs min fæder foleum gecyfied, ædele ordfruma Eogðeow haten (may be pred.); 1913: Ceol up geðrang, lyftgeswenct on lande stod; 2443: sceolde hwædre swa ðæah ædeling unwrecen ealdres linnan.

NSF. (2):—614: even Hroðgares . . . grette goldhroden guman on healle; *ib. 1948.

NSN. (1):—3012: ac ðær is mæðma hord, gold unrimme grimme geceapod (may be pred.).

NS. M. or N. (1):—3085: Hord is gesceawod, grimme gegongen.

NPM. (1):—1819: we sældænd secgan wyllað, foorran cumene, sæt etc.

NPN. (2):—59: ðæm feower bearne forð gerimed in woruld wocun.—Other examples:—3049: * sûrhetone (or pred.?).

DSM. (1):—1479: sæt ðu me a wære forðgewitenum on fæder stæle (cf. Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 16).

APF. (1):—1937: ac him wælænde weotode tealde, hand-gewriðene.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (50).

NSM. (27):—1113: wæs eðgesyne . . . ædeling manig wundum awyrded; 721: Com . . . rinc siðian dreamum bedæted; *ib. 1275.—Other examples:—1451: befengen freawrasnum; 2274: fyre befangen; *ib. 2595; 531: beore drunecn; 1467: wine ——; 2580: bysigum gebæded; 3117: strennum gebæded; 2359: bille gebeaten; 2401: törne gebolgen; 2111: eldo gebunden; 923: cystim geyfied; 217: winde gefysed; 630: guðe gefysed; 2309: fyre gefysed; 1005: nyde genyded (Wülckerhas genydd); 975: synnum geswenced; 1368: hundum geswenced; 1285: hamere geþuren; 250: wæpnum geweorðed; 1450: since ——; 1038: since gewurðed; 1645: dome ——; 2255: hyrsted golde; 845: niða ofercumen.
NSF. (5):—1443: scolde herebyrne hondum *gebroden*, sid and searoñah sund cunnian.—Other examples:—3018: golde *bereafod*; 1333: fylle *gef(r)ægnod*; 777: golde *geregnad*; 624: mode *geðungen*.

NSN. (5):—553: beadohraegl... on breostum læg, golde *gegyrved*.—Other examples:—2680: niðe *genyded*; 2764: searwum *gesæld*; 2441: fyrenum *geseyngad*; 406: seowed smiðes orðancum.

NS. M. or N. (1): 3146: astah... s weblogiende leg wope *bewunden*.

NPM. (3):—1126: GewitOn him ða wigend wica neosian freondum befelden Fryslân geseOn; 480: Ful oft gebeotedon beore *druncne* ofer ealowæge oretmecgea.—Other examples:—3014: *feoræ gebohte*.

ASM. (1):—3139: Him ða gegiredan Geata leode ad on eorðan unwaclicne, helmum *behøngen*.

ASF. (2):—2931: bryd aheorde, gomela iomeowlan golde *berofene*.—Other examples:—2192: golde *gegyrede*.

ASN. (2):—1900: He ðæm batwarde *bunden* golde swurd gesealde; 1531: wearp ða wundenmæl wrættum *gebunden* yrre oretta (though some consider *gebunden* as nom.).

AS. M. or N. (1):—2769: Swylce he siomian geseah segn eallgylden, ... *gelocen* leoðocæftum.

APM. (1):—1028: ne gefrægn ic freondlicor feower mad-mas golde *gegyrede* gummanna fela in ealobence oðrum gesellan.

APN. (2):—2762: Gesæah... fyrnymanna fatu feormend-lease hyrstum *behrorene*; 871: soðe *gebunden*.

*Note 1.*—Köhler reads *ealo drincende* in 1945, and considers *drincende* an appositive participle; I retain Wülker's *ealodrincende*, which is a substantive.

*Note 2.*—The text is too defective to admit of classifying the following: 304: *gebroden*; 1031: *bewunden*; 2229: *earmsceapen*; 2230: *sceapen*; 3151: *wunden*. 

7
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (10).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (10).

NSM. (3) :— 1583: ac he hlihende broðrum sægede.—Other examples:—874: sceomiende; 347: sorgiende.
NSF. (1) :— 890: gitsiende.
NSN. (1) :— 560: willende.
NPM. (1) :— 2066: hlihende.
GPF. (1) :— 81: ðrymmas weoxon duguða mid drihtne dreamhæbbendra.
DSM. (2) :— 2663: ðæt ic ðe lissa lifgendum giet on dagum læte duguða brucan, sinces gesundne; 2649: Me sægede ðær ðæt wif hire wordum selfa unfriegendum, ðæt etc.
ASM. (1) :— 2169: ac ic ðe lifgende her wið weana gehwam wreo þ scylde.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (32).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (11).

NSM. (4) :— 1571: Swiðe on slæpe sefa nearwode, ðæt he ne mihte on gemynd drepen hine handum self mid hrægle wryon.—Other examples:—725: gehugod; 481: gewanod; 1799: haten (may be pred., as Seyfarth holds).
GPM. (1) :— 1836: feorren cumenra.
GPN. (1) :— 1185: wintra gebidenra etc.
ASM. (1) :— 1865: geðreadne.
ASF. (2) :— 165: ææowde; 549: gesceapene (or pred., ?).
ASN. (1) :— 2022: forslegen (or attrib., ?).
APN. (1) :— 1520: besmitten.

II. WITH OBJECT (21).

NSM. (9) :— 930: dugeðum bedæled; 2099: eorum be- droren; 2124: secgum befyllæd; 2605: wine druncen;
1818: drihtne geocoren; 2668: egesan geðread; 2137: elne gewurðod; 32: niðes ofþyrsted; 2740: hleowfeðrum þeaht (or pred.?).

NPM. (5):—86: leohte belorene; 76: þystrum þeþeahte; 1734: metode geocorene; 1693: hleoðrum gedælde; 2002: eocum ofþegde.

NPF. (2):—2082: dome bedrorene; 2010: freondum beþlagene.


ASN. (2):—1263: hundtwelstig geteled rime wintra; 2344: geteled rimes.

APN. (1):—1336: þu seofone genim on þæt sundreced tudra gehwilces geteled rimes.

Note.—Seyfarth considers the following as appositive participles:—183: unwundod, 319: fylde, 1472: liðend, 2480: þearfende. But, in The Abs. Ptc. in A.-S. (p. 17), I have shown that unwundod is used predicatively, and that fylde is a finite verb. The form of liðend seems to me to show that it is a substantive. I consider that þearfende is used substantively, as does Dietrich (quoted by Wülker).—In 2603, geneawod, the text is too defective to admit of classification.

EXODUS (12).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NSF. (1):—213: Wæccende bad eall seo sibgedriht somod sætgædere maran mægenes.

NPM. (2):—452: flugon forhtigende (or pred.?); 264: liðigende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (9).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NPN. (1):—497: synfullra sweot sawlum lunnon fæste befarene.
ASM. (1):—412: unweaxenne.
ASN. (1):—232: x. hund geteled tireadigra.

II. With Object (6).

NSM. (3):—532²: wrecceum alyfed; 532¹: wommum awyrgeð; 549: mihtum wiðed.
NSF. (1):—580: golde geweorðod.
NPM. (1):—36: swæson seledreamas since berofene.
ASN. (1):—372: geteled rime.

DANIEL (13).

A.—The Present Participle (5).

I. Without Object (3).

NSM. (2):—687: hamsittende (or attrib, ?); 573: lifgende.
NPM. (1):—296²: lifgende.

II. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—355: sær sæ dædhwatan geond ðone ofen eodon ʒ se engel mid, ðoerh nerigende; 396: ðeoc . . . gastas lofað lifrean, lean sellende eallum . . . [defective MS.] ece drihten.

B.—The Preterite Participle (8).

I. Without Object (1).

ASM. (1):—521: gesæledne.

II. With Object (7).

NSM. (3):—736: drihtne geccoren; 184²: mode gefrencnod;
184¹: mane gemenged.
NSN. (1):—556: treow . . . telgum besnæded.
NPM. (3):—296¹: lige belegeð; 92: metode geccorene;
259: aldre generede.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 241

Note.—Spaeth considers 696 (Sæton him set wine wealle belocene) as appositive, but the participle is rather predicative after sæton.

CYNEWULF'S CHRIST (65).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (14).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (13).

NSM. (3):—176: Hwæt bemurnest ðu, cleopast ceari-gende?—Other examples:—426: forgongende; 1324: unseomende.

NSF. (4):—1160: Hell eac ongeat scyldwrecende sæt etc.; 1016: sorgende; 1584: scriënde; 288: ðristhyegende.

NPM. (4):—950: brecende; 387: bremende; 90: geomrende; 992: vanende.

DPM. (1):—1266: sorgendum.

ASM. (1):—1391: ða ic ðe on ða fægran foldan gesette to neotenne neorxnaawonges beorhtne blædwelan, bleom seinende.

II. WITH OBJECT (1).

NPM. (1):—1271: on ðam hi awo sculon wraec winnende wængðu dreogan. [Grein¹ and Gollancz¹ & ² write as a compound, wræcwinnde.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (51).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (15).

NSM. (2):—475: æcweð Waldend engla, gefysed, Freamihhtig, to Fæder rice; 970: Grornað gesargad eal mid-dangeard (but Hertel considers it predicative after an intransitive verb).

NSF. (3):—1065: aræred; 1087: biseon (or pred.?); 380: geblissad.

NSN. (2):—218: acenned; 961: gesargad.
NPM. (3):—1229: arasode; 1298¹: ascamode; 1274: fordone.

NPN. (2):—1223: ḷonne beoð gesornad ȝa cleean folc . . . gecorene bi cystum; 1071: ḷonne weoroda mæst for e Waldende, ece and edgeong, ondweard gæð, neode ond nyde bi noman gehatne (may be masc., as Cook gives it).

GPM. (1):—179: Ne ic culpan in ðe, incan ænigne æfre onsfunde, womma geworhtra.

ASN. (1):—890: mon mæg sorgende folc gehyran, hyge-geomor, hearde gefysed, earum cwìsende cwicra gewyrhtu, forhte afërde.

APN. (1):—892: afërde (quoted under ASN. 889 above).

II. With Object (36).

NSM. (6):—625: ond to ðære ilcan scealt eft geweorðan wurnum awcallen.—Other examples:—725: claðum bewunden (or pred.?); 1407: bidceled dugeðum ond dreamum; 1432: mane ——; 1206: deaðfirenum fordene; 10:5 monnum sended.

NSF. (4):—192: ḷonne sceal Dauides dohtor sweltan, stanum astyrfed.—Other examples:—1085: blode bestemed (or pred.?); 908: gebleod wundrum; 292: beaga hroden.

NS. N. or M. (1):—1139: ðæs temples segl, wundorbleom geworht to wlite ðæs huses, sylf slat on tu.

NPM. (21):—940: steorran swa some stredað of heofone, ðurh ða strongan lyft stormum abeatun.—Other examples:—1525: rædum birofene; 1519: willum biscyrede; 1643²: sorgum biwerede; 1643¹: sibbum bisceðede; 831: weelmum biwrecene; 1642: leohće biwundne; 1103: fiремum fordene; 1356: adle gebundne; 1538: lege gebundne; 993: hreowum gedreahte; 1298²: seondum ——; 1508: drynces ——; 1644¹: dreamum gedyrde; 393: swegle gehyrste; 1644²: Dryhtne gebifde; 149: suslum geslæhte; 385: dome ge-swīðe; 986: sundes getwæfde; 1509: ðurste geðegede; 447: hræglum gewerede.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 243

GSM. (1):—20: Eadga us siges oðrum forwyrned, wlitigan wilsïdes, gif his weorc ne deag.
DPM. (1):—151: bring us hælolif wergum wite-þeoowum, wope forcymenum.
ASF. (1):—120: Nu we hyhtfulle hælo gelyfað ðurh ðæt Word Godes weorodum brungen.
APM. (1):—873: slaþpe gebundne.

Note.—In 891 (mon mæg sorgende folc gehyran, hyge-geomor, hearde gefysed, earum eðwendum ðeowrum ðæt Word Godes eowrum brungen), Hertel considers eðwendum appositive, but to me it seems to be used predicatively as a second accusative.

ELENE (26).

A. THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (9).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (7).

NSM. (3):—352: swa hit eft be eow Essaias . . . wordum mælde, deophyeggende ðurh dryhtnes gast; ib. 881; 951: wiðerhyggende.
NSF. (1):—449: Ne mæg . . . Ebreæc eðod ræðæcahtende rice healdan.
NPF. (1):—906: sawla ne moton manfremmende in minum leng æhtum wunigan.
DSM. (1):—810: Sie æc, mægena god, ðrymsittendum ðæne butan ende.
ASM. (1):—795: Forlæt nu . . . wynsumne up under radores ryne rec astigan lyftlacende.

II. WITH OBJECT (2).

GPM. (1):—1096: ða se halga . . . eode gumena ðeoreate god hergendra.
DPM. (1):—1220: ðæ eallum beead on ðæm gumrice god hergendum, werum and wifum, ðæt etc. (Schürmann: substantivized).
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (17).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NSN. (1):—1226: mærøst beama, ʀa ᵃf ſorᶣan up awëoxe geloden under leafum.

GPM. (1):—992: Nãs ɬa fricgendra under goldhoman gad in burgum feorrán geferede [Sievers as quoted by Wülker: geferedra?].

ASM. (1):—529: mec fœder min ... unweaxenne wordum lærde.

II. WITH OBJECT (14).

NSM. (6):—697: cleopigan ongan sarum besyled.—Other examples:—932: sarum forsoht; 1128: egesan geaclod; 720: hungre gehyned; 1263: wirum gewlenced; 1094: breostum onbryred.

NSF. (1):—331: on ſrymme bad ... geatolic guðcwen golde gehyrsed.

NSN. (2):—2: Ḑa wãs agangen geara hwyrftum tu hund ḗ ſreo geteled rimes; 634: geteled rime.

NPM. (2):—766: dreogas deαcwale in dracan fœðme ſeostrum forþylmed; 263: hyrstum gewerede.

NPN. (1):—883: leomu colodon ſreanedum beþeaht.

GPN. (1):—1284: Sceall æghwyle ... worda swa same wed gesyllan, ealra unsnyttro ær gesprecenra.

ASM. (1):—1058: ṣæt he gesette ... Iudas ſam folce to bisceope ... cræftum gecorene.

Note.—Schürmann (p. 368) considers the following appositive, but I substantive:—279: meþelhegenden; 395: synwyrceende. On the other hand, as the statistics show, I have classified as appositive participles several words that he considers as substantives.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 245

JULIANA (28).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (11).

I. Without Object (10).

NSM. (5):—68: Da reordode rices hyrde wið sære fæmnan fæder frecne mode daraðhæbbende; 281: lyft-lacende; 137: ðe ðu hæstlice manfremmende to me beotast (or subst.?) 445: sceal nu lange ofer ðis scyldwyrcende scame ðrowian; 261: siðende.

NSF. (1):—252: gleawhyegende.

NSN. (1):—648: ic leof weorud læran wille æfrem-mende, etc.

NPM. (1):—662: væccende.

DSF. (1):—196: wiðerhyegendre.

ASM. (1):—435: ðrymsittendne (cf. Phoenix 623).

II. With Object (1).

GPM. (1):—6: geat on græswong god hergendra hæðen hildfruma haligra blod ryhtfremmendra. [Gollancz has god-hergenda[r]a, in which case we have a substantive.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (17).

I. Without Object (7).

NSM. (5):—411: aeyrred; 320: afongen; 417: bifolcn;
262¹: gedungen; 262²: sended (or pred., as Conradi holds?).

GPN. (1):—686: witedra.

ASM. (1):—617: awyrgcdne.

II. With Object (10).

NSM. (4):—350: facne bifongen; 203: niða gebæded; ib.
462; 582: yrre gebolgen.
NSF. (2):—241: heolstre bihelmad; 535: breostum inbryrded.
NPM. (4):—681: hroðra bidæled hyhta lease helle sohton.—Other examples:—486: beore druncne; 13: dæ-dum gedwolene; 490: sarum gesohte.

GUTHLAC (42).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (11).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (10).

NSM. (1):—1085: lac onsægde deophyegende dryhtne to willan.
NPM. (7):—203: sceoldon wæcmaegenas ofgiefan gmornende grene beorgas; ib. 651; 117: θοναν σιδ tugen, wide waðe wuldræ bescyrede lyflacende.—Other examples:—401: murnende; 828: scudende; 879: wedende; 635: wiperhyegende.
NPF. (1):—1250: wyrta... hunigflowende.
GSM. (1):—1190: neosendes.

II. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—1029: ac he hate let torn soliende tearas geotan. [Furkert considers soliende predicative after let, but incorrectly I think. Cf. Judith 272.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (31).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (8).

NSM. (5):—911: Hreðer innan born afysed on fordœsia.—Other examples:—1286: aræred; 662: gegeawad; 1287: gesewen; 913: ungeblyged.
NSN. (1):—1282: lic colode belifil under lyfte.
NPF. (1):—1249: wyrta geblowene.
NPN. (1):—1263: scadu sweðredon tolysed under lyfte.
II. With Object (23).

NSM. (8):—1127: avrecen wælpilum; 1260:... wælstræ- 
  lum; 967: fleæce bifongen; 1143: leana biloren; 1004: 
foldærne biðæht; 640: attre geblonden; 1126: nearwum 
geneæged; 1274: husle gereorded.

NSF. (1):—1325:—þonne seo þrag cymeð wefen wyrd- 
staðum (or pred.?).

NSN. (1):—888: him to honda hungre geðreatad fleag 
fugla cyn.

NPM. (7):—116: wuldre byscyrede; 873: dreamum bidro- 
rene; 872: hiwes binotene; 1047: wilna biscyrede; 645: 
wuldre biseyrede; 858: adle gebundne; 1046: ac in lige 
sceolon sorgwylmum soden sar wanian.

NPN. (2):—930: leomu hefegedon sarum gesohte; ib. 
1003.

ASM. (3):—1312: life bilidenne; 992: is me ... geðuht, 
 þet þe untrymnes adle gongum on þisse nyhtan niht 
bysgade, sarbennum gesoht; 1118: feorhhord onleac searoceægum 
gesoht.

APM. (1):—740: leohete geræhte.

RIDDLES (44).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (8).

I. Without Object (8).

NSM. (4):—13. 14: lifgende; ib. 29. 9; 3. 8: winnende; 
41. 107: wrotende.

NSN. (1):—49. 4: sínce for secgum swigende cwæð.

NS. F. or N. (1):—84. 5: wiht ... ferende.

NPM. (1):—17. 6: hi beoð swiðran þonne ic þ mec 
slittena sóna flymæð.

GSF. (1):—55. 5: stondendre.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (36).

I. Without Object (9).

NSM. (4):—72. 12: bunden; 24. 16: searosæled; 2. 11: sended; 24. 15: unbunden.
NS. F. or N. (1):—24. 2: io eom wrætic wiht on gewin sceapen.
NSN. (1):—31. 2: bewunden.
NPM. (1):—12. 6: gemædde.

II. With Object (27).

NSM. (12):—28. 14: mægene binumen; 28. 13: strengo bistolen; 3. 9: holmmægene biðeaht; 18. 2: gefyllæ dryht-gestreona (or pred. ?); 2. 10: holme gehrefed; 71. 8: hringum gehyrsted; 4. 66: meahtum gemanad; 41. 85: gewefen wundorcæfte; 91. 4: hringum gyrdæd; 5. 2: hringum hæftæd; 11. 4: yðum ðeaht; ib. 17. 3.
NSF. (5):—27. 6: sindrum begrunden; 71. 1: reade bewæfed (or pred. ?); 32. 20: frætved hyrstæm; 4. 22: eare geblonæm; 32. 10: geocæren ærstæm.
NSN. (2):—31. 3: fyre gebysgad (or pred. ?); 31. 2: wedre gesomnæd (or pred. ?).
NPM. (4):—14. 8: meahtum aweahte; 12. 6: mode bestolæm; 14. 7: reafe birofeæm; 12. 7: dæde gedwolæm.
NPN. (1):—27. 14: wrætic weorc smiða wire biføngæm.
ASF. (1):—87. 2: wombe ðryðem geðrungæm.
ASN. (2):—24. 8: spilde geblonæm; 30. 3: listum gegierwed.

Note 1.—Two Latin appositive participles occur in the Riddles, but are not translated into Anglo-Saxon:—90. 4: Dum starem et mirarem, vidi gloriam magnam: duo lupi stantes et tertium tribul[antes] III pedes habebant, cum septem oculis videbant.
Note 2.—The defective text precludes the classification of the following:—78. 7: bewrigene; 83. 3 and 4: life bewunden, fyre gefalsad; 84. 40: wuldrum gewlitégad.

**ANDREAS (33).**

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (7).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (4).

NSM. (3):—1557: hean, hygegeomor, heofende spreec; 378: ænig ne wende, sæt he lifynde land begete; 59: He ða wepende weregum tearum his sigedryhten sargan reorde, grette.

GSM. (1):—528: ðu cyninges eart ðegun... ðrymsittendes.

II. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (2):—570: Æðelinge weox word þæt wisdom, ah he ðara wundra a dom agende ðæl ænigne frætre ðéode beforan cyðde; 300: Him ða ofstlice Andreas wið wine ðearfende wordum mælde (cf. Guthlac 1321, where wineðearfende is substantive).

DPF. (1):—491: Ìc wæs on gifeðe iu þu syxtyne siðum on sæbate, mere hrerendum mundum freorig, eagorstreamas.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (26).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (12).

NSM. (6):—78: ðy læs ic lungre seyle ablended in burgum ... leng ðrowian.—Other examples:—1299: averged; 267: bewunden; 1127: gehafted; 436²: geþreated; 436¹: geðyd.

NSN. (1):—1529: sund grunde onfeng deope gedrefed.

NPM. (1):—665: ðæs ðær folces ma... sinra leoda nemne ellefne orettmæcgas, geteled tireadige.

GPM. (1):—24: hie blod and fel, fira flæschomanc forran cumenra ðegun.
ASM. (1):—1651: Ðær se ar godes anne gesette wisfæstne wer;... j gehalgode... Platan nemned.
ASCII. (1):—646: ic on ðe sylfum soð oncwawe wisdomes gewit wundorcræfte, sigespæd gesæald (or fact.?).
APM. (1):—883: swylice we gesegon for suna meotudes... eowic standan, twelfe getealde, tireadige hæleð.

II. With Object (14).

NSM. (5):—309: ðæt ðu sæbeorgas secan woldes, mere-streama gemet, maðum bedæled.—Other examples:—1314: dugudum bærafod; 413: billum foregrunden; 983: elne gefyrðæred; 1313: myrce gescyrded.

NSN. (1):—772: morðre bewunden.

NPM. (4):—1631: witum aspedde; 1618: wuldre bescyrede; 1003: dreore druncene; 746: mode gemyrde.

DSM. (1):—487: ðæt ðu me getæhte... hu ðu wægflotan wære bestændon, sehengeste sund wisige.

ASF. (1):—675: he lungre ahof woðe... wean onblonden.

ASN. (1):—1035: gelæede... on frið dryhtnes tu j hundteontig getæled rime (cf. Andr. 665 and Elene 2, 634).

APN. (1):—1046: weorod on wilsð wolcnum beðæhte.

Note.—The ms. is too defective to classify 1025: gewyrht.

PHÈNIX (26).

A.—The Present Participle (4).

I. Without Object (4).

NSM. (1):—368: forðon he drusende deað ne bisorgað.

NSF. (1):—502: ðonne ðeos woruld scealdwyrcende in scome byrneð.

GPM. (1):—178: calra beama on eorðwege upledendra.

DSM. (1):—623: ond ðe ðone sy ãrymsittendum. Cf. Summons to Prayer 2: ãrymcyninge thronum sedens; and ib. 25: to ðæodne thronum regenti.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (22).

I. Without Object (7).

NSM. (3):—525: afæred; 180: gescylded; 160: geðungen.
NPM. (1):—592: gebredade.
NPF. (2):—226: geelungne; 541: gecorene.
ASN. (1):—274: gefrætwed.

II. With Object (15).

NSM. (9):—535: fææce bifongen; 306: bregden feðrum;
602: bregden wundrum; 140: sælum geblissad; 27: wyn-
num geblouwen; 162: wintrum gebysgad; 486: wæpnum
geðryðed; 551: wuldre geweorðad; 550: breostum on-
bcryrded.

NSF. (1):—503: ade onæled.
NSN. (1):—62: lyfte gebysgad.
NPM. (1):—633: manes amerede.
ASF. (2):—170\textsuperscript{1}\&\textsuperscript{2}: biholene \& bihydde monegum.
APM. (1):—488: sawlum binumene.

METRES OF BOETHIUS (13).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (6).

I. Without Object (6).

NSM. (1):—2. 2: Hwæt ic lióða fela lustlice geo sang on
sælum! nu sceal siofîgende wope gewæged wrecceæ gïomor
sïgan sarewidæ = Boeth.\textsuperscript{2} 3. 2: Carmina qui quondam
studio florente peregi, flebilis in mæstos cogor inire modos.

NSF. (3):—20. 221: ðonne hió ymb hi selfe secende
smeað; \textit{ib.} 20. 214; 20. 212: hwærfeð ymbbe hy selfe oft
smeagende ymb etc.

NSN. (1):—3. 4: ðonne hit wînnende his agen leoh ð
forlætedê.
NPF. (1):—11, 34: Swa hæfð geheaðerod hefonrices weard mid his anweald ealle gescafta, sæt hiora sæghwic wið oðer wínd, þæah wìnnende wæðiað fæste = Boeth.²
48. 3: Quod pungnantia semina fœdus perpetuum tenent.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (7).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—1. 82: forðoht.
NSF. (1):—6. 15: geondstyred.
NPM. (1):—25. 7: ymbestandne = Boeth.² 95. 2: sæptos.
APM. (1):—19. 4: alæded (perhaps should be alædeð, as Grein conjectures).

II. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—2. 3: wope gewæged (see Latin under 2. 2 above).
NSN. (1):—3. 8: sorgum geswenced.
NPM. (1):—25. 6: golde gegerede.

THE METRICAL PSALMS¹ (37).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (17).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (13).

NSM. (2):—50. 75 (Cot.): ðonne ic ... ofer snawe self scinende ðiure sibbe lufan sona gemete = et super nivem dealbabor; 77. 65¹: s læpende = dormiens.
NPM. (5):—50. 56 (Cot.): cerrende = o; 125. 5¹²: gangende ȝ ferende georne wepað = euntes ibant et flebant; 146. 10: se ðe mete syleð manegum neatum, hrefnæs briddum, ðonne heo hropende him cigeað to = Qui dat jumentis escam ipsorum, et pullis corvorum invocantibus eum; 113. 25: līfigende = qui vivimus.
DSN. (1):—82. 6: mid eardiendum folce in Tyrum = cum habitantibus Tyrum.

DPM. (1):—140. 6: mid mannum manfremmendum = cum hominibus operantibus inquitatem.

ASN. (2):—140. 4: sete swæse geheald swylce, drihten, muðe minum (ne læt man sprecan) j æðele dor ymb-standende, sæt on welerum wisdom healde = Pone, Domine, custodiam ori meo; et ostium circumstantice labiis meis; 57. 6: yrnende = currens.

APM. (2):—68. 25: gramhiogende = o; 123. 2: lifigende = vivos.

II. With Object (4).

NSM. (2):—104. 10: and him sæ mid soðe sægde, eawæнde = Et statuit . . . dicens; 105. 4: Gemune us, drihten, on modsefan forð hyegende folces ðines j us mid hælo her geneosa = Memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui; visita nos in salutari tuo.

NPM. (1):—138. 17: Blodhreowe weras! ge bebugaS me, ðe sæt on geSOhtum ōnceaS eawæнde = Viri sanguinum decline at me; quia dicitis in cogitationibus vestris.

GSM. (1):—105. 17: Hi . . . ongunnan . . . onwendan heora wuldor on ðæne wyrsan had hæðenstryces hig etendæ = et mutaverunt gloriam suam in similitudinem comedentis foenum.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (20).

I. Without Object (9).

NSM. (3):—115. 6: ſīnre ſeowan suun on ſe acenned = filius ancillæ tue; 148. 9: alæded = o; 50. 74: geclænsod = mundabor.

NSF. (2):—50. 127 (Cot.): hiorte geclansod = cor contritum; 143. 10: Ic . . . singe on psalterio, ðe him swynsaS oft mid tyn strengum getogen hearpe = cantabo tibi; in psalterio decem chordarum psallam tibi.

8
NSN. (1):—128. 4: afothen = evellatur.
NPM. (1):—67. 24: gegaderade = conjuncti.
NPF. (1):—50. 145 (Cot.): forgefene = o (or pred.?).
ASF. (1):—107. 9: Hwylc gelædet me on lifes byrig faeste getrymede = Quis deducet me in civitatem munitam.

II. WITH OBJECT (11).

NSM. (2):—77. 65\(2\): wine druncen = crapulatus a vino;
54. 24: bealuinwites fæcne gefylled = dolosi.
NSF. (1):—50. 128 (Cot.): hiorte . . . geeadmeded inge-
ðancum = cor . . . humiliatum.
NPF. (1):—50. 51 (Cot.): ic . . . bidde sæt me forgefene
gastes wunde an forðgesceaf feran motec. [There is no
Latin correspondence to this part of 50. 51, the verse being
much amplified in the O. E. translation. Grein in Glossary
sub v. forgifan says that forgefene is accusative absolute, and
supplies ic as subject of motec. I translate as Dietrich (quoted
by Grein): ‘ut mihi condonata animi vulnera in abolitionem
abire possint.’]
NPN. (3):—106. 36: syðsan greowan lungre land heora
aloden wæstnum = Et seminaverunt agros, et plantaverunt
vineaes, et fecerunt fructum nativitatis; 148. 10: fugla cynn
fíðerum gescyrped = volucres pennatae (may also be sin-
gular); 67. 17: værun cræta tyn ðusendo geteled rime =
currus Dei decem millibus multiplex.
DSN. (1):—67. 26: on ðinum temple tidum gehalgod,
sæt ys on Hierusalem = a templo sancto tuo quod est in H.
(or NSM.?).
ASF. (2):—59. 8: weallum beworhte = munitam; 131. 5:
stowe drihtne gecorene = locum Domino.
APN. (1):—106. 32: He on westenne wynne streamas
soðfæst sette, sær he sarig folc gedewde ðurste ða blissade =
Quia posuit flumina in desertum, et exitus aquarum in
sitim.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 255

B.—MINOR POEMS.*

AZARIAS (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NPM. (1):—162: *lifigende.*

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NPM. (1):—161: lege *bilegde.*

CALENDAR OF SAINTS (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (2).

NSM. (2):—7: forðy se kalend us cymeð *gesinged* on sam ylcan dæg; 164: sætte Haligmonð heledum *gesinged* fereð to folce.

II. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—142: wæstmum *hladen*; 205: forste *geferad* (may be acc.).

CHARMS (4).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—I. 74: Ful æcer fodres fira cinne *beorht-blowende*, þu *gebletsod weoru*.  

*The text of the Ruin is so defective that I have taken no account of this poem.*
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (2).

ASN. (1):—1. 61: heo si geborgen wið ealra bealwa gehwylc, ðara lyblaca geond land sawen.
APN. (1):—1. 64: ðæt awendan ne mæge word ðus geewedene.

II. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—VIII. 30: Johannes wuldre gewlitégod.

CHRIST'S DESCENT INTO HELL, RESURRECTION, ASCENSION, AND APPEARANCE AT FINAL JUDGMENT (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

APM. (1):—81: gebeged.

II. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—172: dome gewurðad.
NSN. (2):—284: wynnum bewunden; 283: gimmum gefrætetwod.

CREED (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

ASM. (1):—10: cyning, hider asendne.

DOOMSDAY (5).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (2).

NSM. (1):—25¹: muronigende cwað. 
NPM. (1):—231: deriende gedwinað.
II. With Object (1).

NPN. (1):—112: cumað hider ufon of heofone deæ beaenigende tacen = signa minantia mortem of Latin original.

B. THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—290: blotmum behangen; 25²: mode gedrefed.

DREAM OF THE ROOD (Vercelli Text) (3).

A. THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—24: Hwæðre ic sær liegende lange hwile beheold hrowocearig hælendes treow.

B. THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. Without Object (1).

DSN. (1):—49: Eall ic wæs mid blode bestemed, begoten of sæs guman sidan.

II. With Object (1).

ASN. (1):—5: leohte bewunden.

DURHAM (1).

A. THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NPN. (1):—19: Eardiað . . . in ðem minstre unarimeda reliquia, monia wundrum gewurðad.
EADGAR (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. With Object (2).

NSM. (1):—28 B: hama bereafod.
NSN. (1):—11 A: agangen wæs tynhund wintra geteled rimes.

EADWEARD (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—9: wel geþwungen.

II. With Object (1).

NSM. (1):—16: lande bereafod.

FALLEN ANGELS (DIE KLAGEN DER GEFALLENEN ENGEL) (12).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (12).

I. Without Object (3).

NSM. (1):—181: aworpen.
NPM. (1):—308: gefrætewod.
ASF. (1):—341: Godes andsacan hweorfan geond helle, hate onæled ufan and utan.

II. With Object (9).

NSM. (5):—186: goda bedæled; 122: duguþum bedeled; 121: wuldre benemed; 38: gebunden fyrelommum; 131: synnum forwundod.
NPM. (3):—344: dreamum bedælde; 52: susle begrorene; 343: wuldres bescyrede.
NPF. (1):—296: sorgum bedælde.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 259

FATES OF MEN (3).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

DSM. (1):—9: god ana wat, hwæt him weaxendum winter bringeð.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. WITH OBJECT (2).

NSM. (2):—55: dreamum bisoyred; 20: mode gebysgad.

GLORIA (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (2).

NSM. (2):—10: asyndrod; 12: gebletsod.

GNOMIC VERSES (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—II. 35: to ðæs oft cymeð dead unðinged.

HARROWING OF HELL (HÖLLENFAHRT CHRISTI) (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (2).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (2).

NSM. (1):—24: hlyhhende spræc.
NPM. (1):—91: mædon murnende.
HUSBAND'S MESSAGE (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2):

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

NSF. (1):—13: ðæt ðu sinchroden sylf gemunde.

II. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—39: nyde gebæded (ms. is defective).

HYMN (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—43: haliges gastes fegere gefelled.

INSCRIPTION ON CROSS AT BRUSSELS (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

NSF. (1):—2¹: bær byfigende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSF. (1):—2²: blode bestemed.

JUDITH (9).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITH OBJECT (1).

NPM. (1):—272: Hi ða somod calle ongunnon cohhetan, cirman hlude þ girstbitian gode orfeorme, mid toðon torn
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 261

Coligende. [Cf. Guthlac 1029: torn coliende; and Psalm 111: torn tosum solian = dentibus fremere.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (8).

I. With Object (8).

NSM. (2):—67: wine swa druncen; 118: gystrum forsylded.

NSF. (2):—171: golde gefraetewod; 129: seawum gesungen.

ASF. (2):—36: beagum gehlæste; 37: hringum gehrodene.

ASN. (1):—329: golde gefraetewod.

APF. (1):—339: gerenode golde.

Note.—A. Müller considers sæarffendre in 85 (io se ... biddan wylle milte sinre me sæarffendre) and geweorðod in 299 (Him on laste for sweot Ebrea sigore geweorðod) appositive; they may be, but to me the former seems attributive and the latter predicative.

MALDON (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NPM. (1):—57: sæt ge mid urum sceattum to scype gagon unbefohtene (or pred.?).

RUNESONG (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. With Object (2).

NS. F. or M. (1):—31: flor forste geworuht.

NSN. (1):—37: wyrtrumum underwreðyd.
SALOMO AND SATURNUS (6).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (3).

NSM. (1):—105: Chonne he hangiende helle wisceš.
NPN. (1):—220: aterrcynn, . . . ča če nu weallende čūrh
attres oroď ingang rymaš.
ASF. (1):—447: līfigende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (2).

NSF. (1):—31: gegoten.
NSN. (1):—222: gescæned.

II. With Object (1).

ASM. (1):—104: heolstre behelmed.

SEAFARER (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without an Object (1).

NSM. (1):—106: cymeď him se deaď unďinged.

II. With an Object (3).

NSM. (3):—16*: winemægum bidroren; 17: bihöngen
hringicelum; 16*: wynnum biloren.

SOUL AND BODY (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—46 (Verc.): ic wæs gast on če fram gode
sended (or pred.?).
II. With Object (3).

NSM. (2):—34 (Verc.): flæsce befangen; 67 (Verc.): synnum gesargod.
NSN. (1):—105 (Verc.): dædum gedrefed.

SPIRIT OF MEN (4).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NPM. (1):—82: we sculon a hyegende hælo rædes gemunan in mode mæla gehwylecum ðone seelstan sigora waldend.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

I. With Object (3).

NSM. (3):—42: ðrymme gebyrmed; 41: wine gewæged; 43: æfestum onæled.

SUMMONS TO PRAYER.

Note.—No example occurs in the Anglo-Saxon part of this poem, but two occur in the Latin, both with an object:—
2: ðæenne gemiltsað ðe . . . ðrymcyninge thronum sedens;
25: to ðeodne thronum regenti. With both compare Phoenix 623: ðrymsittendum.

WALDERE (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NSF. (1):—B 19: Standeð me her on eaxelum Ælfræres laf god and geapneb, golde geweorðod (or pred.?).
WANDERER (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NSM. (1):—20: eðle bidæled.

WHALE (5).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NP. M. or N. (1):—32: bið... deófla wise, sæt hi drohtende ðurh dyrne meaht duguðe beswicæð.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—70: gereaht (but the passage is doubtful).

II. With Object (3).

NSM. (1):—45: heoloðhelme biðeaht.
NSN. (1):—10: sondbeorgum ymbseald.
NPM. (1):—74: gyllum gehrodene.

WIDSID (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—39: ac Offa geslog ærest monna cnihht wesende cynerica mæst (cf. Beow. 46, 372, 535, 1187; Bede 142. 8, 188. 1).
B.—The Preterite Participle (1).

I. With Object (1).

NSM. (1):—53: godes and yfles ðær ic cunnade cnosle bidæled.

Wonders of Creation (3).

A.—The Present Participle (3).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—80: witan . . . oððe hwa ðæs leothytes lond-buende brucan mote.

II. With Object (2).

NPM. (2):—14, 15: cuðon ryht sprecan, ðæt a fricgende fira cynnes þ segeonde searoruna gespon a gemyndge mæst monna wiston.

Note.—Bewritten of line 19 should be bewrítan or bewríðan, as several editors conjecture.
### SYNOPSIS TABLE OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLES IN ANGLO-SAXON.

#### I.—IN THE PROSE WORKS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Without Object.</td>
<td>With Object.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Total.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>N.</td>
<td>G.</td>
<td>D.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bede,1</td>
<td>107</td>
<td>93</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boeth,1</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>17</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greg,1</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oros,1</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ps. Th,1</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chron</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Laws</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benedict,1</td>
<td>63</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bl. Hom.</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ælf. Hom.</td>
<td>477</td>
<td>203</td>
<td>176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ælf. L. of S.</td>
<td>335</td>
<td>129</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ælf. de V. et N. Test.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ælf. Hept.</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Hom. &amp; L. of S.</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Hom. &amp; L. of S. H.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mat.</td>
<td>67</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gospels</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luke</td>
<td>91</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wulfst.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benet,1</td>
<td>103</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals in the Prose Works...</td>
<td>1636</td>
<td>807</td>
<td>707</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| Total                        | Without Object.    | With Object.         |                                   |
|                             | Total.             |                      |                                   |
|                             | N. | G. | D. | A. | Total. | N. | G. | D. | A. |
| Bede,1                      | 73 | 60 | 40 | 2 | 18 | 13 | 5  | 3  | 3 |
| Boeth,1                     | 10 | 10 | 6  | 3 | 1  | 1  | 1  |   | 1 |
| Greg,1                      | 24 | 23 | 18 | 2 | 3  | 1  | 1  |   | 1 |
| Oros,1                      | 5  | 5  | 5  | 1 | 1  | 1  | 1  |   | 1 |
| Ps. Th,1                    | 4  | 4  | 4  | 1 | 3  | 1  | 1  |   | 1 |
| Chron                      | 33 | 33 | 28 | 2 | 12 | 5  | 5  | 1 | 1 |
| Laws                        | 15 | 15 | 9  | 1 | 4  | 3  | 3  |   | 3 |
| Benedict,1                  | 9  | 8  | 8  |   | 1  | 1  | 1  |   | 1 |
| Bl. Hom.                    | 16 | 15 | 12 |   | 3  | 1  | 1  |   | 1 |
| Ælf. Hom.                   | 199 | 194 | 151 | 1 | 57 | 5  | 5  | 3 | 1 |
| Ælf. L. of S.               | 208 | 205 | 154 | 2 | 50 | 5  | 5  | 3 | 1 |
| Ælf. de V. et N. Test.      | 25 | 25 | 18 | 1 | 7  | 3  | 3  |   | 3 |
| Ælf. Hept.                  | 38 | 38 | 18 | 6 | 14 | 9  | 9  |   | 9 |
| A.-S. Hom. & L. of S.       | 40 | 40 | 32 | 3 | 5  | 5  | 5  |   | 5 |
| A.-S. Hom. & L. of S. H.    | 6  | 5  | 4  |   | 1  | 1  | 1  |   | 1 |
| Mat.                        | 13 | 10 | 6  | 1 | 3  | 3  | 3  |   | 3 |
| Gospels                      | 10 | 8  | 5  | 1 | 3  | 2  | 2  |   | 2 |
| Luke                        | 20 | 18 | 12 | 3 | 5  | 5  | 5  | 1 | 1 |
| John                        | 6  | 6  |   |   | 1  |   |   |   |   |
| Wulfst.                     | 19 | 15 | 9  | 6 | 4  | 4  | 4  |   | 4 |
| Benet,1                     | 39 | 30 | 27 | 3 | 9  | 4  | 4  | 1 | 1 |
| Totals in the Prose Works... | 807 | 762 | 561 | 7 | 48 | 146 | 45 | 16 | 5 | 9 | 15 | 2443 |
## II.—IN THE POEMS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Without Object.</td>
<td>With Object.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Total.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Total. N. G. D. A.</td>
<td>Total. N. G. D. A.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beowulf</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>19 13 2 4</td>
<td>4 4 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Genesis</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>15 6 2 1</td>
<td>4 4 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exodus</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3 3 2 1</td>
<td>2 2 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daniel</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3 3 2 1</td>
<td>2 2 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cynwulf’s Christ</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>13 11 2 1</td>
<td>1 1 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elene</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>9 7 5 1</td>
<td>1 1 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Juliana</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>10 8 2 1</td>
<td>1 1 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gyrlac</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>10 9 1 1</td>
<td>1 1 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riddles</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8 7 1 1</td>
<td>4 4 3 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andreas</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>4 3 1 1</td>
<td>3 2 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phoenix</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4 2 1 1</td>
<td>1 1 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metres of Boethius</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6 6 6 1</td>
<td>3 3 3 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metrical Psalms</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>13 7 2 1</td>
<td>4 4 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minor Poems</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>15 13 2 1</td>
<td>5 5 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals in Poetry</td>
<td>148</td>
<td>129 96 5 11 13</td>
<td>23 18 3 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals in Prose</td>
<td>1636</td>
<td>807 707 8 42 50</td>
<td>829 786 8 9 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grand Totals</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>932 803 13 53 63</td>
<td>832 804 11 11 26</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CHAPTER II.

USES OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

The uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon may be grouped under the three following larger heads:

I. The Appositive Participle is equivalent to a Dependent Adjectival (Relative) Clause, and denotes either an action or a state, as in:—Mk. 3. 1: ἃρ was an man forscrunecene hand hæbbende = erat ibi homo habens manum aridam; Bede1 246. 7: sende . . . halighe wer ï in his ðeawum gemetfæstne ï in leornunge . . . wel gelærdeñe = 194. 28: misit . . . nirum sanctum, . . . scripturarum lectione sufficienter instructum; Beow. 624: ðæt hio Beowulfe, beagroden ewen, mode geðungen medoful ætbær; Aelf. L. S. 28. 58: On ðæm yleen dege com sum bisceop, helenus gehaten.

II. The Appositive Participle is equivalent to a Dependent Adverbial (Conjunctive) Clause, and denotes time, manner, means, etc., as in:—Bede 8. 23b: ðæa brynas . . . gebiddende adwæste = 37. 5: incendia orando restinxerit; ib. 10. 10: þæt se ylea bisceop geworden onbead = 48. 1: Ut idem episcopus factus mandarit; Beow. 480: Ful oft gebeotedon beore druncene ofer ealowæge oretmecgas.

III. The Appositive Participle is substantially equivalent to an Independent Clause, and either (1) denotes an accompanying circumstance or (2) repeats the idea of the principal verb. Doubtless, as Gildersleeve holds (Latin Grammar, § 664, Remark 1), an ultimate analysis would show every participle to be dependent in nature; but the dependence here is so slight that it may be ignored. Certainly the function of the participles under this head is so radically
different from that of those under I. and II. as to demand separate consideration. Nor does the fact that in modern English we not infrequently retain the participle in our translation of (2) (cf. Mat. 13. 3) invalidate this classification. To define the class negatively: all appositive participles that are not equal to either a dependent adjectival or a dependent adverbial clause are considered as equal to an independent clause. This use of the participle is commonly recognized by Greek and Latin grammarians. Thus, in the remark just cited, Gildersleeve admits this use of the participle, although he objects to its being classed as co-ordinate: "It is sometimes convenient to translate a Participle Sentence by a co-ordinate clause, but the Participle itself is never co-ordinate, and such clauses are never equivalents." Goodwin also recognizes this use; in § 832–§ 844 of his Moods and Tenses he designates the relations expressed by his "Circumstantial Participle" as follows: (1) time, (2) means, (3) manner, (4) cause, (5) purpose, (6) condition, (7) concession, (8) "any attendant circumstance, the participle being merely descriptive;" (9) "that in which the action consists." His (8) and (9) cover exactly the ground of my "participle substantially equivalent to an independent clause;" and it seems to me that to give this use the name Co-ordinate is in the interest of simplicity. This modification made, Goodwin's "Circumstantial Participle" would tally perfectly with my "Participle equivalent to a dependent adverbial clause." Fay (l. c.) and Milroy (p. 16) explicitly state that the participle is occasionally equivalent to a co-ordinated finite verb. If I dwell on this co-ordinate use of the participle, it is because it has received but scant treatment in our standard English and German grammars (see March, § 459 (4), Mätzner, III, p. 70 (c), and von Jagemann, § 124, c), and is not mentioned in any of the dissertations on Anglo-Saxon or Germanic syntax that have come under my notice. Examples are as follows:—(1):—

Lk. 4. 39: he standende ofer hig ham beføre bebead = stans super illam imperavit febri; ib. 10. 23: þa cwæþ he to his

The relative frequency of these three uses of the appositive participle—the adjectival, the adverbial, and the co-ordinate—may be gathered from these figures: of the adjectival there are about 1223 instances in all, 881 in the prose and 342 in the poetry; of the adverbial, about 897 instances, 691 in the prose and 206 in the poetry; of the co-ordinate, about 890 instances, 871 in the prose and 19 in the poetry. In all about 3010 examples of the appositive participle have been collected, of which 1784 are present and 1226 are preterite.

So much by way of general statement; let us now consider the three classes in detail.

I. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS EQUIVALENT TO A DEPENDENT ADJECTIVAL (RELATIVE) CLAUSE.

As we have seen, the adjectival is the commonest use of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, about 1223 examples occurring in all. Of this number 881 occur in the prose, and 342 in the poetry, in each distributed throughout all periods.

The adjectival use is found with both the present and the preterite participles, but is far more frequent with the latter than with the former. About 377 examples occur of the present participle, and about 846 of the preterite. Examples of each participle are given below.

The present participle, in this use, has the power of governing a direct object, but it occurs far more frequently
without an object than with one, especially in Early West Saxon and in the poetry, in the latter of which an object is almost unknown. In all we have 270 present participles without an object and 107 with an object. [See the discussion of the Governing Power of the Participle, in Chapter III.]

The past participle, too, can have an object (see Explanatory Note to Statistics), and in the poetry usually does; in prose the reverse is the case. Of the preterite participles used adjectivally, 609 have no object, of which 525 are found in the prose and 84 in the poetry; while 237 do have an object, of which 39 are from the prose and 198 from the poetry.

As stated in my Introduction, not a few scholars deny the adjectival use to the appositive participle, and class all participles that are equivalent to a relative clause as attributive. I have, however, already explained why I do not accept this view, and have shown that the meaning of the term appositive participle has been extended to include participles equal to relative clauses. Still other scholars admit that the participle equivalent to a relative clause may be used appositively, but only, they maintain, when the participle denotes an act (in the largest sense); that which denotes a state or condition being called attributive. It appears to me that, in so doing, these grammarians are confounding two distinct things, viz., the classification of the participle by its nature and the classification by its syntactical relationship,—a confusion that should be avoided. But I have not ignored the object at which these scholars aim, namely, sharply to discriminate between the participle that has strong verbal (assertive) power and the participle that has strong adjectival (descriptive) power; on the contrary, by arranging the whole of my statistics with reference to whether or not the participle is followed by an object, and by emphasizing the co-ordinate use of the participle, I have tried to segregate the more verbal from the less verbal participles to a degree not
attempted hitherto in Anglo-Saxon. To apply this principle to the matter in hand, the participle that is equivalent to an adjectival (relative) clause: the transitive participle with an object is manifestly nearer a verb than the participle without an object. Again, the preterite participle is more like an adjective than is the corresponding present participle. This will sufficiently explain the chief differences between my statistics and those of former investigators as to the adjectival use of the appositive participle.

The adjectival use occurs in most of the texts, prose and poetical, and I give a few examples here from the chief writers in prose and in poetry.

I. In Prose.

Ælfræd.—Bede. 8. 2: ἦτ Ρ . . . was siended to gelyfendum Scottum on Crist = 28. 15: Ut . . . P. ad Scottos in Christum credentes missus est.—Ib. 78. 15: ἦτ wiif in blodes fownesse geseted . . . meahte gehrinan = 55. 25: Si ergo in fluxu . . . posita . . . potuit tangere.—Boeth. 46. 27: Hwæt is heora nu to lafe, butan se lytla hlisa y se nama mid feaum stafum awritten? = 47. 17: Signat superstes fama tenuis pauculis Inane nomen litteris.—Greg. 155. 10: ὁνε he ongiet be sumum ὄνγυμ oððe ἐσαυμ utanne ætæwðum eall ἦτ hic innan ёнeca = 112: qui discussis quibusdam signis exterius apparentibus ita corda . . . penetrat etc.

Ps. Th.:—20. 3: ὑυ sendest his heafod kynegold, mid deorwyrðum gimmum astæned = posuisti in capite ejus coronam de lapide pretioso.

Chron. :—755 F.: Sibertes broðer, Cynehord gehaten, ofsloh Cynewulf on Merantune.

Laws:—Ælfræd, c. 9, Title: Be bearneacenum wife ofslægænum [MS. B.: Be ɹam ɹet man ofsela wiif mid cilde].

Bened. 1:—25. 16: and nu fram ɹam englum us betæhtum ure weorc . . . boð gebodude = 50. 13: et ab angelis nobis deputatis . . . opera nostra nuntiantur.
II. In Poetry.

Beow. — 777: þær fram sylle abeg medubenc monig mine gefráge, golde geregnad.—Ib. 1645: þa com in gan ealdor þegna, dædecene mon dome gewurðad.

El. — 331: þær on þymme bad ... geatolic guðcwen golde gehyrsted (or pred.?).—Ib. 352: Swa hit eft be eow Essaias witga for weorodum wordum mælde, deophycggende ðurh dryhtnes gast.

Gen. — 725: hloh ða þ plegode boda bitre gehugod.—Ib. 1836: hwæt sie freondlufu ellðæodigra uncer twega, ðeorren cumenra.

II. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS EQUIVALENT TO A DEPENDENT ADVERBIAL (CONJUNCTIVE) CLAUSE.

Of the adverbial use of the appositive participle I have found about 897 examples, 691 in the prose and 206 in the poetry.

The present participle occurs 538 times in this use, and the past participle 359 times.
Of the present participles 430 have no object and 108 have; of the preterite participles 261 have no object, while 98 have.

In its adverbial use the appositive participle denotes subordinate relations of manner and means (combined here under the head of Modal), of time, of cause, of purpose, of concession, and of condition. Of course, these uses so interlap that at times the same participle can with propriety be put under several different heads. Where classification is so largely a matter of subjectivity, there must be much room for difference of opinion. I trust, however, that in the main my classification will justify itself to my readers. According to my estimate, the approximate number of each use is: Modal, 319; Temporal, 248; Causal, 228; Final, 40; Concessive, 33; Conditional, 29.

Let us look at each for a moment by itself.

I. MODAL.

The Modal use of the appositive participle is far more frequent in Anglo-Saxon prose than in the poetry, 257 examples occurring in the former and 62 in the latter.

Of these 319 examples 254 are present and 65 are past.

An object is rarely used with the modal participle, only 16 occurring with the present participle and 22 with the preterite.

Though occurring in all periods of Anglo-Saxon, the modal participle is much more common in the works of Alfred than in those of any other author. In his Bede and his Gregory the construction is especially frequent, about one-third of all the examples being found in these two works. Here, as my statistics show, the Anglo-Saxon participle often translates a Latin gerund in the ablative; and the frequency of the gerund in the two originals has doubtless caused the large number of modal participles in the two translations.

As stated above, the modal participle denotes both manner and means. It is not always easy to tell which notion
predominate, but the examples below will, it is hoped, sufficiently illustrate the two tendencies.

Some participles denoting manner, instead of being equivalent to a dependent adverbial clause, are practically equivalent to a simple adverb, as in: Bede\(^1\) 86. 22\(^{a,b}\): sæt he wæccende sóhte sæt he [no] weotende ærænde = 60. 28: quia, quod cogituit sciens, hoc pertulit nesciens; ib. 38. 1: Pa... he ealle ða witu... gedyldelic ðe gefande abær = 20. 1: Qui... patienter hæc pro Domino, immo gaudenter ferebat; ib. 310. 30: Pas we seondon arfæstlice fylgende ð rihtwuldriende = 239. 23: Hos itaque sequentes nos pie atque orthodoxe; Ælf. Hom. 1. 52\(^b\): he for ðæm stænendum welwillende gehæd; Mat. 5. 11: segeæd æle yfel ongen cow leogende for me = dixerint omne malum adversum vos mentientes propter me; etc., etc. Personally I believe it would be better to class such words as participial adverbs rather than adverbial participles; but, as I hesitate to set up new categories, in my statistics I have retained them under the ordinary rubric, save in one or two cases that could not be construed as participles, like ðreaende (Greg.\(^1\) 159. 18, etc.: see Statistics). This use of the participle as an adverb, it is well known, is common in Greek (see Goodwin, Greek Grammar, §1564) and in Latin (see Gildersleeve, Latin Grammar, §325. 6). In Old High German it was so very frequent that there was developed a regular adverbial form of the participle in -o (O. Erdmann, Syntax der Sprache Offrids, § 359; see below, Chapter v.). I have not, however, found this use of the participle treated in Koch, Mätzner, March, or in the dissertations on Old English syntax. There is perhaps a suggestion of it in Cosijn (ii., p. 97), who writes of Greg.\(^1\) 159. 18: "adverbialisch ðreaende?" Further illustrations are given under "(2) Manner" below.

(1) Means.

I. In Prose.

Ælfred:—Bede\(^1\) 22. 9: sæt se b. ænne dumbne munn gebiddende gehælde = 282. 30: Ut episcopus mutum benedi-
MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

cendo curuerit. So gebiddende = orando in Bede¹ 22. 11, 22. 14, etc.—Ib. 72. 3ᵃᵇ: ßette oft [seo cirice] ßet wiðer-
worde yfel aborende ß ældend bewered = 51. 29: ut sæpe
malum quod aduersatur portando et dissimulando conpescaet.—
Greg.¹ 53. 16: Sua si micla cræftiga hiertende toscylß & egesi-
ende stierß ofermetta mid ðære tælinge his hieremonnum, ßæt
he hie gebring on liffe = 30ᵃ: Magnus enim regendi artifex
favoribus impellit, terroribus retrahit: ut etc.—Ib. 81. 10, 11:
ßæt is ßæt he sprecende bebiet ßæt he ßæt wyreende oðiewe,
ßæt hit ðurh ðone fultum sie forðgenge = 54ᵃ: quia quod
loquendo imperat, ostendendo advijut ut fiat.—Ib. 127. 6, 7:
ßæt mod his hieremonna oliccende egesige & ðreáigende olicce
= 88ᵇ: terrendo demulceat, et tamen ad terroris reverentiam
demulcendo constringat.—Ib. 225. 22: ßæ monnswærnesse ðe
he ær ðurhtogen hæfde eft ðæhtigende on yfel gewend [Cott-
ton MS.: gewent] = 170ᵇ: et mansuetudinem, quam tolerantes
habuerunt, retractantes in malitiam vertunt.

Bened.¹:—2. 10: nellen ge elcende eowere heortan ahyrdan
= 4. 15: nolite obdurate corda vestra.

Bl. Hom.:—89. 34ᵃᵇ: raðe he lifgende ut eode of his byr-
genne mid his ageure mihte æweht.

Ælfric:—Hom. 1. 226ᵇ: Mare miht wæs, ßæt he ðone deað
mid his æriste toþræc, ðonne he his lif gehoolde, of ðære
rode astigende.—Ib., ii. 182ᵃ²: ðone ðe B. na handlunge ac
on-besemde fram his bendum alysdé.

Gosp.:—Lk. 12. 25: Hwylc eower mæg ðencende icane eelne
to his anlinesse? = Quis autem vestrum cogitando
potest adicere ad staturam suam cubitum unum?—Mk. 15.
30: gehæl ðe sylfne of ðære rode stigende = Salvum fac
temetipsum descendens de cruce.

II. In Poetry.

El.:—449: Ne mæg æfre ofer ßæt Ebreæ ðeod raððæah-
ende rice healdan. [May be adjective, as Schürmann and
Garnett hold.]
(2) Manner.

I. In Prose.

Ælfred:—Bede 1 72. 9: ña ðe him ne ondræåð wrotonde
syngian = 52. 1: qui non metuunt sciendo peccare.—Ib.
102. 21: is sægd ðæt he beatigende forecwæde = 83. 27:
fertur minilans prædixisse.—Boeth. 1 3. 7: Hu B. hine sing-
ende gebæd, ðj his earfån du to Gode mænde.—Ib. 9. 29:
Ongan ða giddien, ðj ðus singende cwæð.—Ib. 8. 15: ða ðe
ða ðis leoð, cwæð B., geomricende asungen hæfde, ða com
e etc. = 4. 2: Hæc dum mecum tacitus ipse reputarem quermoni-
amque lacrimabilem stili officio signarem, adstitisse . . . uisa
est mulier etc.—Greg. 1 185. 9: ææç• mon seal sprecan
asciende, sulce he be ôðrum menn sprece & ascie = 138•:
prius per quasdam similitudines velut de alieno negotio
requirendi sunt.—Ib. 405. 31: hi ofermogiende his gebæd
forhogdon = superbiens ejus jussa contempsit.—Ib. 379. 23:
Hie scoldon gehieran hu Essaias se witga kreasvigena hine
selfne telde = 294•: Audiant quod Isaías magna voce peni-
tentice se ipse reprehendit.—Ib. 381. 25: cwæð ðæt ða scolden
bion synderlice Godes ñegnas, ða ðe unmándende ðara
scyldegena gyltas ofslogen = 296•: illos a parte Dei de-
nuntiavit existere, qui delinquentium scelera inueniante
ferirent dicens (or adverb?) —Ib. 117. 23: Forðam we beç•
mid Gode sua micle suidor gebundne sua we for monnum
orsorglicor ungewitnode syngiað = 82•: Tanto ergo apud Domi-
nun obligatores sumus, quanto apud homines inulde peccamus.

Ælfrie:—Hom. 1. 54•: ðæt ðu scealt miltsegende forgifan.—
Ib. 1. 340•¹: he hit bær on his exlum to ðære eowde blissigende.

Gosp.:—Mat. 6. 5: ða luðian ðæt hig gebidden hi standende
on gesomnungum = qui amant in synagogis . . . stantes
orare.—Mk. 5. 40: inn-eodon suwiende ðær ðæt mæden ðæs
= ingreditur ubi puella erat jacens.—Ib. 9. 24: wepende
cwæð = cum lacrymis aiebat.—Lk. 22. 65: manega ðøre
þing hig him to cwædon dysigende = alia multa blasphæ-
mantes dicebant in eum.
II. In Poetry.

Beow. 2062: him se oðer ðonan·losað wigende, con him land geare. [If we adopt Heyne's lifgende, the participle is Final instead of Modal. See below under Final].—Ib. 2235: swa hy on geardagum gumena nathwylc eormanlæfe æðelan cynnes ðanchyegende ðær gehydde.—Ib. 2595: niwan stefne nearo ðrowode fyre befongen, se ðe ær folce weold. [May be Adjectival, but is more probably Modal, as K. Köhler puts it.]

Andr. 1557: hean, hygegeomor, heofende spræc. [May be Adjectival.]

Gen. 1582: ac he hlihende broðrum sægde.

II. TEMPORAL.

The second most frequent use of the adverbial appositive participle is to denote relations of time. If we use the term temporal in a very broad sense, no doubt a number of participles that I have put under other rubrics might be put here, since almost any participle may be looked upon as indicating after a fashion a time relationship. But I have classed as temporal only those participles in which the idea of time seems definite rather than general. Of the 248 temporal participles in Anglo-Saxon, 200 are found in the prose, and 48 in the poetry.

Of these participles 166 are in the present tense, and 82 in the preterite.

As with the modal participle, so here an object is rare; 28 occurring with the present participle and 10 with the preterite.

As my table shows, the temporal participle is sprinkled throughout the periods of Anglo-Saxon.

Examples follow:—

I. In Prose.

Ælfred:—Bede 214. 11: swa eft onlysed ðy lichamon byrneð = 166. 4: ita solutus corpore ardebit.—Ib. 264. 25:
song _Obj_ingongende_ealle_gefylded = 208. 25: quod _ingressa_ [= uox] totum impleuit.—_Ib._ 142. 8: sægde he _OBJ_Saet_he_hine [i. e., _here_, sanctuary] _eneoth_weosende_gesawe_ (MS. _Ca_: hine cynde cnihth _wesende_) = 116. 12: se _in purititia_ uidisse testabatur.—_Greg._ 93. 9: Hit is gecueden _OBJ_Saet_se_sacerd_scolde_swelthan_, gif se sweg nære of him gehiered ægðer ge _ingongendum_ge_utgongendum_, etc. = 62b: Sacerdos namque _ingrediens_ vel _egrediens_ moritur, si de eo sonitus non auditur.—_Ib._ 399. 14: Sio Segor gehælde Loth _fleondne_ = 318a: Segor civitas, _quæ fugientem_ salvet _infirmum._

_Aelfric:_—_Hom._ i. 232a: Crist ableow _OBJ_Sone_Halgan_Gast_ofer_Sa_apostolas, Sa-gyt _wunigende_on_eorðan._—_Ib._ ii. 250b 2: Se H. _OBJ_Sa_stod_on_Sam_domerne_gelcedd._

_Gosp._—_Mat._ 7. 6: hig _OBJ_Sonne_ongean_gewende_eow_toslyton = _conversi_ dirumpant vos.—_Mk._ 15. 15: sealde him _OBJ_Sone_hælend_beswungenne = tradidit Jesum flagellis _æsum_ (or _Adjectival_?).

II. In Poetry.

_Beow._:—535: Wit _OBJ_Saet_gegewædon_cniht-wesende._—_Ib._ 815: wæs gehwaðer _srum_lifigende_ lað.

_El._:—529: Ðus mee _sædær_min_on_fyrndagum_unweax- enne_wordum_lærde.

_Gen._:—2169: ac ic _OBJ_Se_lifigende_her wið_weana_gehwam_wreo ß_scylded.

III. CAUSAL.

Of the 228 Causal Participles, 157 belong to the prose and 71 to the poetry.

The present participle is found 56 times, the preterite 172 times.

An object occurs with the present participle in 23 instances, and with the preterite in 51 instances.

The causal use is pretty evenly distributed throughout the various prose and poetical texts.

Not a few of the examples are doubtful.
I. In Prose.

Ælfric.—Bede 8. 5: ðæt Bryttas mid ðy mærran hungre genedde ða elreordian of heora gemærum adrifan = 29. 12: Ut Brettones fame famosa coacti barbaros suis e finibus pepulerint.—Ib. 62. 13: he ða gefeonde wæs gefulwod = 47. 22: credens baptizatus est.—Ib. 186. 31: ac heo swa ondredende from him gewat = 151. 10: quin in tantum timens auffugit.

Ælfric.—Hom. i. 380 b: he feallende toberst on feower sticca.—Ib. i. 594 b: Egeas greebyligd het hine ahon.

Gos..—Mk. 3. 5 b: ofer hyra heortan blindnesse geurnet cwæð = contristatus super secitate . . . dict.—Mat. 14. 8: Da cwæð heo fram hyre meder gemyngod = At ulla praemonita a matre sua . . . inquit (or Temporal?).—Ib. 15. 31: swa ðæt ða mænegu wundredon geseonde dumbe spre ende etc. = Ita ut turbæ mirarentur videntes mutos loquentes.—Lk. 4. 28: Da wurdon hig ealle on ðære gesamnunge mid yrre gefylled, ðas ðing gehyrende = Et repleti sunt omnes in synagoga ira, hæc audientes.

II. In Poetry.

Andr. 436: wæteregesa sceal gesyð ð geðreatod ỳrhh ðryðcinining, lagu lacende ðierra wyrðan.—Ib. 746: oððe sel nyton mode gemyrde.

El. 1128: he ðan næglan onsfeng egesan geaclod ð ỳære arwyrðan cweone brohte.

Gen. 1571: Swiðe on slæpe sefa nearwode, ðæt he ne mihte on gemynd drepen hine handum self mid hrægle wryn ỳ secome ðecan.

IV. FINAL.

The appositive participle denoting purpose is rare, only 40 examples having been found; 39 in the prose, and 1 in the poetry (doubtful).

This use is confined almost exclusively to the present participle; but one example occurs in the preterite (Ælfr. Hom. i. 134 b), and that is doubtful.
The final participle has an object oftener than not; of the 39 present participles 35 have an object. The single example of the preterite participle has no object.

A glance at the table will show that only three examples have been found in Early West Saxon: two in Bede, each answering to a Latin participle; and one in Gregory, corresponding to a Latin infinitive of purpose. Most of the examples occur in Ælfric's Homilies and in the Gospels.

Among the examples may be cited:

I. In Prose.

Ælfric:—Hom. 1. 74a: Hi Æa begen Æone apostol gesohton, his miltsunge biddende.—Ib. 1. 134b: gebrohte Ææt cild Æe heo acende, H. C., gelacod to Æam Godes temple (or adjectival?).—Ib. 1. 338b: “Sonne forlæt he Æa nigon and hund-nigontig on westene and Ææs secende Ææt an Æe him losode” [or Pred.? Cf. Mat. 18. 12: Ææs and secæ = vadit quaerere].

Gosp.:—Mat. 19. 3: Æa genealæhton him to farisæi hyne costnigende Ææcælon = Æt accesserunt ad eum Pharisæi ten-
tantes eum, et dicentes.—Lk. 2. 45: hig gewendon to hierusalem hyne secende = regressi sunt in Jerusalem requirentes eum.—J. 6. 6: sæct he cwæð his fandigende = Hoc autem dicebat tentans eum. So J. 8. 6: fandiende.

II. In Poetry.

Beow. 2062: if we read lisigende; but we have the modal use if we read wigende (see above, under Modal).

Dan. 355: wearð se hata lig todrifon þætodwæced, ðær ða dæðhwaton geond ðone ofen eodon þæ se engel mid, feorh nerigende, se ðæ ðær feordæ was, Annanias þæ Azarias þæ Miseol (or pred.?).

V. CONCESSIVE.

The concessive use of the appositive participle is somewhat rarer even than the final. 33 examples occur in all, 25 in the prose, and 8 in the poetry.

Of these 19 are in the present, and 14 in the past tense.

An object is very rare, only 4 occurring with each of the two participles.

As to its distribution, but three examples have been found in Early West Saxon, namely, one each in Bede, Gregory, and Orosius, the two first corresponding to Latin participles, and all being doubtful. Most of the instances are in the Gospels. One example occurs in each of these poems: Beowulf, Elene, Genesis, Guthlac, Juliana, and Metres of Boethius, and two in the Phoenix.

The following will serve as examples:—

I. In Prose.

Ælfræd.—Bede\(^1\) 278. 18\(^b\): Gif he sænæ sibba onfongen, haten ham hweorfan, ne wille, etc. = 216. 16\(^b\): Quod si semel susceptus noluerit invuitatus redire, etc. [May be temporal, as Miller translates.]—Greg. 153. 1: Ac monige scyllda open-
lice *witene* beð to forberanne = 110* : Nonnulla autem vel apertem *cognita*, nature toleranda sunt, etc. [May be adjectival.]—Oros. 250. 14 : Æfter dem Germanie gesoht on Agustus ungeniende him to frie. [May be modal.]

Ælfrie:—Hom. i. 596b: forðan sce he ne geswicð soð to bodigenne, nu twegen dagas eceu *hangigende*.

Gosp. :—Mat. 13. 13a & b: forðam ic spece to him mid bigpellum, forðam sce lociende hig ne geseseð j gehyrrende hig ne gehyræð = quia *videntes* non videat, et *audientes* non audium. So : Mk. 4. 12a & b; Lk. 8. 10a & b.—Lk. 5. 5b : Eala bebeodend ealle niht *swincende* we naht ne gefengon = Præceptor, per totem noctem *laborantes*, nihil cepimus.—Ib. 6. 35 : læne syllæd nan *síng* ðanum eft *gehihtende* = date, nihil inde *sperantes*.

II. In Poetry.

Beow. 2350 : for ðon he ær fela nærne *neðende* niða gedigde. [K. Köhler classes as modal, but Garnett translates as concessive.]

Gen. 2649 : Mei sægde ær sæt wif hire wordum selfa *unfricgendum*, sæt etc.

Guth. 1260 : Bad se æ secolde eadig on elne endedogor avreccen wælstrælum. [Furkert : Pred. after intransitive verb, but Gollancz translates as appositive and concessive.]

Jut. 241 : Symle heo wuldorcyning herede æt heortan heofonrices god in sam nydelafan, nergend fira, heolstre bihelmad.

Phoenix: 162 : Donne wæðum strong west gewiteð wintrum *gebyggad* fleogan fæðrum snel —Ib. 368 : Forðon he drusende deað ne bisorgað.

Metres of Boeth. 11. 34 : Swa hæfð geheaðærOd hefonrices weard mid his anwealde ealle gesceafa, sæt hiora æghwile wið oðer winð, j ðæh *winnende* wrecðiað tæste = 48. 3 : Quod *pugnantia* semina foedus perpetuum tenent.


VI. CONDITIONAL.

Least frequent of all the adverbial uses of the appositive participle is the conditional. Of the 29 examples 13 are in the prose and 16 in the poetry.

The present participle is used 4 times, the preterite 25.

Twice the present participle has an object, and 11 times the preterite participle.

In Early West Saxon, I have found only 4 examples (1 in Bede and 3 in Boethius). Late West Saxon, also, has very few examples, there being one doubtful example in Ælfric and two in the Gospels. In the poetry are represented Beowulf (2), Genesis (3), Exodus (2), Eadgar (1), Andreas (3), Elene (2), Riddles (2), and Metrical Psalms (1).

As my quotations show, several of these examples are quite doubtful.

Typical examples are:

I. In Prose.

Ælfric:—Bede¹ 278. 18*: Gif he æne siða onfongen haten ham hweorfan [ne wille] = 216. 16*: Quod si semel susceps noluerit inuitatus redire etc.—Boeth.¹ 30. 25, 26: Ac gif hi yfele sint ȝ lytige ȝonne sint hi ðe pliolicran ȝ geswinefulran hæfild ðonne naðel; fordæm yfele ȝegnas bioð simle heora hlafordes siend = 37. 47 f.: Qui si uitiosi moribus sint, perrniciosa domus sarcina et ipsi domino uelhementer inimica.—Ib. 91. 8: Ne mæg ic nane cwuce wuht ongian þara ðe wite hwæt hit wille, oððe hwæt hit nylle, ðe ungæed lyste forweordan = 78. 45: nihil inuenio, quod nullis extra cogentibus abiciant manendi intentionem et ad interitum sponte festinent.

Bened.¹ 28. 2: geneadod to anre mile gange, gang willes twa = 54. 7: angariati milliarium vadunt duo.—Ib. 28. 6.

Gosp.:—Mk. 7. 15: Nis nan æing of ðam men gangende ðæt hine besmitan mæge = Nihil est extra hominem introiens in eum quod possit eum coinquinore. [May be adjectival or
temporal.]—Ib. 7. 18: Ne ongyte ge sæt eall sæt utan cymd on ðone man gangende ne mæg hine besmitan? = Non intelligitis quia omne extrinsecus introiens etc. [May be temporal.]

II. In Poetry.

Be.w. 1368, 1370: ðeah ðe hæðstapa hundum geswenced, heorot hornum trum holtwudu sece, feorran geflymed, ðer he feorh seleð.

Gen. 1263: Siðdan hundtwelfig geteled rime wintra on worulde wæ sce bisgedon fæge ðeoda. So geteled rime(s): Gen. 1336, 2344; Exod. 372; Andr. 1035; Eadgar 11; El. 2 and 634; Metr. Ps. 67. 17.

Exod. 232: Wæs on anra gehwam æðelan cynnes alesen under lindum leoda dugudu on folcgetæl fiftig cista; hæfde cista gehwilc cuðes werodes garberendra, guðfremmendra ·x· hund geteled tireadigra.

Andr. 883: Swylce we gesegon for suna meotudes æðelum ecne eowic standan, twelfe geteadæ, tireadige hæleð.

Riddles 24. 15, 16: Nelle ic unbundæ senigum hyran nymðæ sarosæled. Saga, hwæt ic hatte! [24. 15 may be temporal.]

III. The Appositive Participle is Substantially Equivalent to an Independent Clause.

Of the 890 co-ordinate participles 871 are found in the prose, and 19 in the poetry.

The present participle occurs 869 times, and the preterite 21 times.

An object is found far more frequently with the co-ordinate than with the adjectival or the adverbial participle, there being 633 instances with the present, and 2 with the past participle.

The co-ordinate participle is very rare in Early West Saxon and in the poetry; and whenever it occurs in the works of 10
Ælfræd, it is in translation of a Latin appositive participle. It is very common in *Benedict*, in the works of Ælfric, in the *Gospels*, and in *Benet*.

I add a few examples to those already given in defining the co-ordinate use of the appositive participle. They are arranged under two heads: (1) the participle denotes an accompanying circumstance; (2) the participle repeats the idea of the principal verb. The former may conveniently be designated as the "circumstantial" participle in the narrower sense; the latter, as the "iterating" participle.

(1) *The "Circumstantial" Participle.*

I. In Prose.

Ælfræd:—*Bede* 312. 23a & b: we wuldriæ usserne Drihten swa swa ðas wuldredon, noht toætecende ðe onweg ateonde = 240. 18a & b: glorificamus Dominum sicut ... nihil addentes vel subtrahentes.—*Ib.* 312. 25, 27: ða ðe heo onfengon we eac swelce onfod, wuldrieðe God Fæder ðæs Sunu = 240. 20, 21, 22: ... suscipimus, glorificantes Deum et filium eius.—*Ib.* 332. 16: Fordon ðe in ðæm ilcan mynstre ... Hereswið ... regollicum ðæodscipum underðeoded, in ða tid baad ðone ecan sige = 253. 10: Nam H., ..., regularibus subdita disciplinis; expectabat (doubtful).—Other examples:—*Bede* 10. 12: biddende = petens; 14. 4: biddende = postulans; 310. 1: feohtende = compugnantes; 438. 30: sittende = residens. —*Oros.* 12. 32, 33: ðonne forð ðonan west irnende heo tolið on twa ymb an igland ðe mon hæt Merœn, ð ðonan bugende ut on ðone Wendelsæ ... ðæt seo ea bið flowende oser cal Ægypta lond = 13. 20, 22: Ægyptus inferior ... habet ... fluviumque Nilum, qui etc. ... deinde diu ad occasum profluentes, faciensque insulam nomine Merœn in media sui: novissime ad septentrionem inflexus planæ Ægypti rigat.

*Chron.* 656 E (p. 33a): seo papa seonde ða his writ ðus cwæðend (or adjectival ?). So 675 E (p. 35b).
Bened. 30. 3: swigean healdende ne sprece oð ðæt he geah-sod sy = 56. 19: taciturnitatem habens usque ad interrogationem non loquitur.

Ælfric:—Hom. 1. 48*: And gebigde his cneowu, mid micelre stemne clypigende etc.—Ib. 1. 62*: Johannes beseah to heofonum, ðus cwæðende.


Benet 31. 16: mid ealre gehyrsumnessa hine sylfne ðeowde ealdre gegefælæcende drihtnes = omni obedientia se subdat majori, immittans dominum.

II. In Poetry.

Beow. 916: Hwilum flitende fealwe stræte mearam mæton.

Christ 950: Ond on seofon healsa swogað windas, blawað brecende bearhtma mæste.—Ib. 1016: Forðon nis ænig wunder hu him woruldmonna seo unclæne gecynd cearam sorgende hearde ondrede ðonne etc. (or adjectival?)


Met. Ps. 50. 1. 56 (Cot.): Ac ðu synfulle simle lærdes, ðæt hio cerrende Criste herdon ð hiom lif mid ðe langsum begeton.

(2) The "Iterating" Participle.

I. In Prose.

Ælfrith:—Bede 330. 30: heo of eorðan alæxed leorde ðy fifteoðan dæge etc. = 252. 20: de terris ablata transuiuit.—Ib. 240. 26: wool ... feor ð wide grimsigende micle menigeo monna afylde ð fornom = 192. 4: longe lateque desuviens ... straut.—Ib. 312. 2: æfter heora laere ... geðwærelice
we gelyfâð ondettende 239. 24: iuxta doctrinam eorum pro-
fessi credimus consonanter, et confitemur.—Oros.¹ 240. 9:    
wepende mænde ða unare.    
Chron. 1083 Eᵇ: gyrne cleopedon to Gode his miltse    
biddende (or final?).    
Bened.¹ 4. 10: Be ðæm ilican andgyte se hælend cwîð on    
ðæm halgan godspelle ðus elyppende = 8. 16: Unde et Domi-
nus in Evangelio ait.—Ib. 11. 8: hy ðæh forhogiende me    
forsawon = 18. 21: ipsi autem contemnentes spreverunt me    
(or modal?).    
Ælfric:—Hom. 1. 104ᵇ: ðæs Fæder stemn of heofenum    
hlude swegde, ðus cwendende.—Ib. 1. 294ᵇ: him to sprée    
ymbe Godes rice, samod mid him reordigende.    
Gosp.:—Mat. 8. 31: ða deoﬂa soðlice hyne bædon, ðus    
cwœsende = Dæmones autem rogabant eum dicentes.—Ib. 9.    
30: se h. bebead him cwœsende = comminatus est illis Jesus,    
dicens.—Ib. 11. 25: Se h. cwæð andswariende = respondens    
Jesus dixit.—Ib. 12. 10: hi ahsudun hyne ðus cwœsende =    
interrogabant eum, dicentes.—Ib. 13. 31: He rehte him ða    
yght oðer big-spel, ðus cwœsende = . . . proposuit eis, dicens.    
—Mk. 3. 11: ðus cwœsendeclypedon = clamabant dicentes.    
Wulfst. 199. 15: be ðæm awrat Iohannes on ðære bec,    ðæ man hat apocalipsin, ðus cwœsende. So 201. 8.—Ib. 246.    11: swa se witega ðe lærð ðus cwœsende: sepi aures tuas    
spinis.    
Benet.¹ 30. 14: gewrit bebyt seegende = scriptura præcipit    
dicens.    

II. In Poetry.    

Andr. 59: He ða wepende weregum tearum his sigedrihten    
sargan reorde, grette gumena brego geomran stefne.    
Christ 387: Forðan hy, dædhwæte, dome geswiðe, ðæt    
sodfæste seraphinnes cynn, uppe mid englum a bremende,    
unsærotendum ðrymmum singað. [Hertel: pred. after    
intransitive verb.]—Ib. 992: Wepað wanende wergum
stefnum, heane, hygegegeomre, hreowum gedreahte. [Hertel: attrib., but Gollancz: "weep and moan."
]

Guth. 401: Bonan gnornedon, nædon murnende, sæt etc. [May be adjectival or modal.]—Ib. 879: hwilum wæccende swa wilde deor cirndon on corðre.

Jul. 662: Wærlie me sīnceð, sæt ge wæccende wið het-
tendra hildewoman weardhe healdan.

Spirit of Men 82: Forðon we sculon a hyegende hælo rædes gemunan in mode mæle gehwylecum ðone selstan
sigora waldend! Amen!

Harrowing of Hell 91: ðonne hy gehyrdon, hu we hreow-
[ige] [nændon] murnende mæg burg usse. [May be
adjectival or modal.]

Met. Ps. 104. 10: And him ða mid sóðe sægde, cweðende =
Et statuit illud Jacob in præceptum, et Israel in testamentum
æternum, dicens.—Ib. 105. 4: Gemune us, drihten, on mod-
sefan forð hyegende folces ðines ð us mid hælo her geneose
= Memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui; visita
nos in salutari tuo.—Ib. 138. 17: Blodhreowe weras! ge
bebugað me, ðe sæt on geðohtum senceð cweðende = Viri
sanguinum declinate a me; quia dicitis in cogitationibus
vestris. [Cf. 104. 10: where cweðende = dicens.]—Ib. 146.
10: Ñe ðe mete syleð manegum neatum, hresnes briddum,
ðonne heo hropende him cigead to, curæ æses = Sui dat
jumentis escam ipsorum, et pullis corvorum invocantibus
eum.

NOTES.

1. Present Participle in a Passive Sense.—I have found
no instance of the present participle used in a passive sense
in Old English. [Cf. Kellner, Syntax des Englisches Verbums,
p. 85 f.; Koch, II, p. 72; Mätzner, II, p. 56; Sweet, § 2312;
and, for the Germanic languages in general, O. Erdmann,
Grundzüge, I, § 132 f.; Falk and Torp, § 138, 1; and Grimm,
iv, p. 68.]
2. Passive Participle in an Active Sense.—The preterite participle of intransitive verbs has an active sense, such as *cumen, forðfered*, etc.: *Bede*¹ 396. 20: in sære he forðfered bebyrged beon sceolde = 228. 9: in quo *defunctus condi* debeberet; *Ælf. L. S.* 462. 351: ọðææ ët hi becomon to sumum ænicum felda fægre geblown (*sic!*); *Bl. Hom.* 87. 36: befealden to Hælendes cneowum, he cwæð; *Mat.* 7. 6: hig ðonne ongean gewende eow toslyton = *conversi dirumpant vos.* Cf. *bewend* in *Mk.* 5. 30; *L.* 7. 9, 10. 23, etc. Occasionally, too, the past participle of transitive verbs has an active sense: *Greg.*¹ 435. 1: gif hi færelcor syngoden *unbeðohte* = 360. 7: si in his sola *præcipitatione* cecidissent (or adverb?); *Ælf. L. S.* xxiv. 2: wæron twegen kyningas on erist *gelyfe*; *ib.*: xxv. 109, xxvii. 15, etc. (see Statistics); *Ælf. Hom.* i. 66. 12: ðonne færlice gewitt he of ðissere worulde, nacod and *forscyldigod*. But, as in High German (see Grimm as cited below), the use of the preterite participle in an active sense occurs usually, not when the participle is appositive, but when it is attributive or predicative, or has been substantivized; under one of which heads come most of the examples cited by Mätzner, March, Schrader, and Schrauer. *Druncen in wine druncen* and in *beore druncen*, cited by Mätzner and by March as active, seems to me passive in sense. [See Kellner, *Syntax des Verbums*, p. 97 f.; *Koch*, ii, p. 72; Mätzner, iii, p. 93; March, § 455; Schrader, § 104; Schrauer, p. 31; *Sweet*, § 2356; and, for Germanics, O. Erdmann, *Grundzüge I.*, § 133; *Falk and Torp*, § 138, ii; *Grimm*, iv., p. 73.]

3. Supplementary Particles.—Only slight use is made of supplementary particles, which serve the more clearly to indicate the relationship of the participial to the main clause. They seem to be confined to the late West Saxon prose. Examples: *swa swa*: *Ælf. L. S.* xxiii. B. 234: ongan he sworetan *swa swa* eallunga gewæcced on ðam oreðe belocen; *swa ðeah*: *Ælf. Hept. Numb.* 15. 44: Hig *swa ðeah* ablende

4. Pleonastic “and.”—As with the absolute participle (see Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon, p. 21) so with the appositive there is occasionally a pleonastic and: Bede 1 450. 20; Oros. 1 12. 32, 33; Bl. Hom. 243. 7; Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 542, 560, 588, etc., etc. The same is true of Gothic and of Old High German (Gering, p. 401).

I close this chapter with tables showing the distribution of the appositive participle in its several uses (adjectival, adverbial, and co-ordinate), in the whole of Anglo-Saxon Literature.
### SUMMARY OF USES.

#### I.—In the Prose Works.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ADJECTIVAL</th>
<th>ADVERBIAL</th>
<th>CO-ORDINATE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bede.</td>
<td>107</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>72</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boeth.</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greg.</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oros.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ps. Th.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chron.</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Laws.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benedict.</td>
<td>63</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bl. Hom.</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. Hom.</td>
<td>477</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>199</td>
<td>134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. L. S.</td>
<td>235</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>208</td>
<td>152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. de V. et N. T.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. Hept.</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A. S. Hom.</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A. S. hom.</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### II.—In the Poems.

#### Longer Poems:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Beow.</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>108</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exod.</td>
<td>127</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dan.</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christ</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elen.</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jul.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guy.</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rid.</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andr.</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phoen.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metr.</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metr. Pa.</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>20</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>20</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1. Without object, 268; with object, 101.

2. Without object, 217; with object, 5.
### SUMMARY OF USES.

#### II.—IN THE POEMS.—Continued.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Minor Poems:</th>
<th>Adjectival</th>
<th>Adverbial</th>
<th>Coordinate</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Az. {Pres.}</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Az. {Pret.}</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cal. S. {Pres.}</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charms {Pres.}</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christ's De-scent, etc. {Pres.}</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Creed {Pres.}</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doomsday {Pret.}</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dream of {Pres.}</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rood. {Pret.}</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Durham {Pret.}</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eadgar {Pres.}</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eadward {Pret.}</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fallen {Pres.}</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angels {Pret.}</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fates of {Pres.}</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Men {Pret.}</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gloria {Pres.}</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gloria {Pret.}</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Title</td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>Perf.</td>
<td>Plf.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------------------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gnom. V</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harrowing of H.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Husband's Message</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hymn</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Inscript. Inscription</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maldon</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rune Song</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sal.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sal. &amp; Sat.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seafarer</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soul to Body</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spirit of Men</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summon to Prayer</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wadere</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wanderer</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whale</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Widisith</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wonders of Creation</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 Two in Lat.
2 Without object, 62; with object, 7.
## SUMMARY OF USES.

### III.—IN THE PROSE AND IN THE POETRY.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Adjectival</th>
<th>Adverbial</th>
<th>Co-ordinate</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pres. in Prose...</td>
<td>1636</td>
<td>222</td>
<td>95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres. in Poetry..</td>
<td>148</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pres.......</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>270</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret. in Prose...</td>
<td>807</td>
<td>525</td>
<td>89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret. in Poetry..</td>
<td>4:19</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pret.......</td>
<td>1226</td>
<td>609</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pres.......</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>270</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pret.......</td>
<td>1226</td>
<td>609</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grand Total......</td>
<td>3010</td>
<td>879</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

**296 MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.**
CHAPTER III.

ORIGIN OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICiple IN ANGLO-SAXON.

Is the appositive use of the participle a native English idiom, or is it borrowed from the Latin?

The only direct expressions that are known to me on this question are from Einenkel and myself. In his *Mittelenglische Syntax* (Münster, 1887), p. 273, in treating the present participle, Einenkel says: "Das Part. in appositiver Stellung (im Deutschen wiedergegeben durch Adjectiv-Satz) findet sich gelegentlich im AE., häufiger im Afranz., ist jedoch wol in keinem Falle ein einheimisches Gewächs, sondern stammt aus dem Lat., wo die Construction eine ganz gewöhnliche ist. Die verbale Kraft, die das so verwendete lat. part. besitzt, zeigt sich im AE. und Afranz." And in his chapter on English Syntax in Paul's *Grundriss*, § 129, he thus speaks of the preterite participle: "Zu erwähnen ist hier die schon im Altenglischen bekannte später zunehmende appositionelle Verwendung desselben, die vom Lateinischen hervorgerufen und später vom Altfranzösischen vielleicht auch vom Altnordischen unterstützt wird." Einenkel, then, holds that the appositive use of both the present and the past participle in Anglo-Saxon is due to Latin influence.

Before reading Einenkel's treatment I had come to the same general conclusion myself on noticing how sedulously Alfred avoided the use of the appositive participle in his translations from the Latin. And in my monograph on *The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon* (p. 50), in treating of the stylistic effect of the participle in Anglo-Saxon, I incidentally recorded this belief: "Clearly relief was needed here [i. e., from the
heaping up of co-ordinate finite verbs]; and it came through the adoption of the appositive participle from the Latin.”

An indirect statement concerning the origin is this by Th. Müller (p. 250): “Doch ist hinzuzufügen, dass die Verwendung der Partizipien zur Satzverkürzung im Ags. eine ziemlich beschränkte ist, namentlich die Verwendung des absoluten Particips. . . . Im Englischen hat die Anwendung des Part. zur Satzverkürzung sehr an Umfang gewonnen, besonders durch Einwirkung des Französischen und Lateinischen . . . Im Ae. ist die Satzverkürzung durch das Partizip. noch beschränkt und nicht viel ausgedehnt, als im Ags.” A. Erdmann cautiously expresses himself as follows (p. 30): “However common this use [i. e., the appositive] of the participle present, as shown in ii: 1:0, undoubtedly is, still the general run of the language seems to be opposed to the too frequent recurrence of it. There are to be found in the Gospels, in spite of the general closeness of the translation, numerous instances of co-ordinate finite verbs or subordinate clauses substituted for Latin-Greek participles present. In many of these passages the English translation readmits the participle, conformably to the original text.” Owen (p. 61) seems to consider the construction native to English, though somewhat influenced by the Latin; but, as his statement is indefinite, it need not be quoted.

The statements of both Einenkel and myself were in the nature of the case incidental and general. May not the present detailed study of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon enable us to make definite statements with reference to at least several of the uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon? I believe it will; and I turn, therefore, to the consideration of the several distinctive uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

I. The Adjectival Use.

The appositive use of the present participle that is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause, seems to have been largely due to Latin influence and never to have gained
a secure foothold in Anglo-Saxon, because, as my appended tables show:—(1) This use is rare in Early West Saxon. (2) In most of these Early West Saxon examples, the Anglo-Saxon participle is in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle. (3) The construction is rare, also, in the more original prose (the Chronicle, the Laws, and Wulfstan). (4) It is very rare, too, in the poetry; and most of these examples occur in poems known to be translations of Latin originals. (5) It is common in Ælfric, in the Gospels, and in Benet. Of the 13 examples in the Heptateuch all but 2 are translations from the Latin; of the 44 examples in the Gospels every participle except 1; and of the 32 in Benet all except 2. Despite this, it is possible that the appositive use of a few slightly verbal participles like blissigende and gefeonde (see Bl. Hom. 5. 8a b, p. 186 above), and libbenede and liegend (see Laws: Cnut ii, c. 24, Intr.a b, p. 181 above) may be the native extension of the attributive use of such participles in postposition, the apposition arising from the fact that we have a series of participles, some with modifiers. [See above pp. 149, 152, and below on the origin of the adjectival appositive preterite participle.]

Whether the foregoing be accepted or not, this much seems certain: the appositive present participle with a direct object is not native to English, a topic the treatment of which is deferred to the close of this chapter (p. 307).

On the contrary, the adjectival use of the appositive preterite participle is probably native; or, if first suggested by the Latin, was soon naturalized. To me this use seems merely the extension of the attributive use of the preterite participle in postposition (see pp. 149, 152 above) when there was a series of participles modifying a single noun, or when the participle had an object or a somewhat extended adverbial modifier; as in: Ælfr. Hept. (Exod. 12. 19): ne ete ge nan ðing onhafenes, ne utan cymene ne innan lande geborene; ib. 29. 23: Du nymst . . . anne holne hlaf mid ele gesprengedne; Beow. 1126: Gewiton him ða wigend wica neosian freondum befeal-
len Frysland geseon. This difference as to the origin of the appositive present and of the appositive preterite participle is not in reality so strange as may at first appear; for, as already stated in the Introduction, the preterite participle is much more adjectival in nature than is the present participle; and, as our statistics show, in Anglo-Saxon the appositive use of the participle (whether present or past, and in whatever function) is in keeping with this general principle: the construction is most frequent when the participle manifests most of its descriptive (adjectival) and least of its assertive (verbal) power.

Whatever the explanation, it is a fact that the adjectival use of the preterite appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is far more common than that of the present participle, and it seems thoroughly naturalized, if not native. For our tables show (1) that the construction is common in Early West Saxon, in the more original prose works, and in the poetry, as well as in Ælfric, the Gospels, and Benet; and (2) that in the translations, notably in the Heptateuch, a considerable fraction of the appositive preterite participles used adjectivally are not translations of Latin participles.

The same distinction between the appositive present and the appositive preterite participle is found in the other Germanic languages (see chapter v).

II. THE ADVERBIAL USE.

1. Modal.

(1) Manner.

The appositive use of the participle (present and past) denoting manner, was probably native to Anglo-Saxon; if not, it was certainly early naturalized. We find this use very often in Early West Saxon, often in Ælfric and the Gospels, and occasionally in the more original prose and in the poetry. Moreover, in the translations, the Anglo-Saxon participle
corresponds not only to Latin participles, but also to Latin prepositional phrases, to nouns in the ablative, to finite verbs, to adjectives, and to adverbs; while in not a few cases there is no Latin corresponding to the Anglo-Saxon participle. Nor is the participle denoting manner confined to the poems known to be translations; on the contrary, the largest number of examples in any single poem is found in Beowulf. Finally, it may be said that in this use the participle has but slight verbal power; and hence the fact that the construction was native to Anglo-Saxon (or, if this be not allowed, was early naturalized), is what we should expect after what has been said above concerning the lack of verbal power in the Anglo-Saxon participle.

(2) Means.

The appositive use of the participle denoting means was in all probability not native to the English, but was borrowed from the Latin. It is found chiefly in the more direct translations and in the works of Ælfric, and in the former almost invariably corresponds to a Latin participle or to a Latin gerund in the ablative, in the majority of cases to the latter. It is practically unknown in the more original prose and in the poetry. Since the verbal power is more prominent in the participle denoting means than in that denoting manner, we need not be surprised at the difference in the origin (or the naturalness) of the two.

The modal participle in both of its uses has substantially the same history in the other Germanic languages (chapter v).

2. Temporal.

With the exception of a few slightly verbal participles like being, living, and sleeping, the temporal use of the appositive participle, strange as it may seem, can hardly have been a native idiom in Anglo-Saxon. When it occurs in the prose translations, it is with but a few exceptions a direct transla-
tion of a Latin appositive participle. Only two examples occur in the more original prose (*Laws*, 1: *Ine C*. 35: *Se de ðeof slihð, he mot aðe geyðan, ðæt he hine fleondne for ðeof sloge*; and Wulfstan, 1: 295. 14: *hi scolon fleonde on gefeohete beon ofslagene*). As to the poetry, most of the examples occur in the poems that rest upon Latin originals. 14 examples, however, occur in *Beowulf*, nine in the present and five in the preterite (*lifgende*: 815 and 1953; *unlifgendum*: 1389; *sleæpende*: 1581 and 2219; *wessende* (usually in composition with *cniht* and *umbor*): 46, 372, 535, 1187; *druncen* (in *beore* and *wine druncen*): 480, 531, 1467; *forðgewitenum*: 1479, which may be adjectival; and *fylle gef(r)ægnod*: 1333). But after all only five different words are involved; these are often used adjectivally, and the temporal use here may be partly due to that fact.* At any rate, the temporal use of the appositive participle can hardly be considered organic in a work showing only five words so used. Moreover, in Anglo-Saxon, time relations are normally denoted by a finite verb introduced by a subordinating conjunction, as is evidenced by its habitual rendering of the Latin temporal participle (see chapter IV).

In the other Germanic languages, also, the temporal use is restricted to participles of slightly verbal power, like *being, living, sleeping* (chapter V).

3. *Causal.*

The use of the appositive participle to denote cause seems, in the main, to be an imitation of the Latin. Few examples occur in Early West Saxon; and the majority of these as of those in other translations correspond to Latin participles, though a few answer to substantives in the ablative or to adverbs. The construction is exceedingly rare in the more

*Einenkel (Mittelengl. Syntax, p. 279) derives the temporal use of the preterite appositive participle from the adjectival (relative) use of the same.*
original prose, there being but two examples in the *Chronicle* (1087 E: *geseonde*, which has an object and is therefore to be excluded from consideration; 449 A: Hengest y Horsa from Wyrtgeorne *geleáðode*, Bretta kyninge, gesohton Bretene (MS. E: *gelaðode* Wyrtgeorn Angelcin hider; MS. F: *com Angelcynn to Æisum lande, geleáðode* from Wyrtgeorne cinge)) and two in Wulfstan (133. 5a & b: sculon eowre heortan eargjan swiðe and eowra feonda mægen strangjan ðearle, and ge tofesede swiðe affirhte oft lietl werod earhlice forbugað = 131. 23: et animam uestram tabescentem faciam, et perseverantium nos inimici uestri, et fugietis nullo persequent). In the poetry, but five examples occur with the present participle; two have an object (*Andreas* 1, and *Guðlac* 1) and are therefore not to be considered; while three occur in poems based on Latin originals (*Genesis* 2, *Exodus* 1). In all probability, then, the causal use of the present appositive participle is not native to Anglo-Saxon poetry. As to the past participle, as I have already said in a preceding chapter, many of the examples are doubtful and may be considered adjectival (relative). K. Köhler, for example, does not consider as causal any one of the nine examples that I have classed as such in *Beowulf*. Most of the other causal preterite participles in Anglo-Saxon poetry are in poems based on Latin originals; those in the prose have been discussed in the beginning of this paragraph.

It seems highly probable, therefore, that the causal use of the present participle in both prose and poetry is due to Latin influence; it seems probable that the causal use of the preterite participle is largely due to Latin influence, but that it is partly an extension of the adjectival use of the preterite participle, which latter has been shown to be so common in Anglo-Saxon. As is shown in chapter iv, the Latin causal participle is in Anglo-Saxon normally translated by a subordinated finite verb.

For the other Germanic languages, see chapter v.
4. Final.

The appositive participle denoting purpose is mainly from the Latin. But three examples occur in Early West Saxon, two corresponding to Latin participles and one to a Latin infinitive of purpose. No example has been found in the more original prose. The instances in the Gospels and in Benet correspond invariably to a Latin participle. The single example in the poetry (already quoted: Dan. 355: neri-gende) is from a poem based on the Latin. A still further reason for considering the final use unoriginal is this: 35 of the 39 present participles have an object (see p. 307 below). But, as the statistics show that the final participle in Old English occurs, as in Latin (Gildersleeve, Latin Grammar, § 670, 3), chiefly after verbs of motion, it may well be that the very frequent predicative use of the participle in Anglo-Saxon after verbs of motion contributed somewhat to its appositive use to denote purpose.

See, further, chapters IV and V.

5. Concessive.

The concessive use of the appositive participle is likewise to be ascribed to Latin influence. Of the three examples found in Early West Saxon, two are direct translations of Latin participles; while the third (ungeniedde in Oros. 250. 14), though without a Latin correspondence in this particular instance, answers to (non)coacti, which occurs elsewhere in Alfred's Latin originals (as in Bede 2 29. 12: co-acti = 8. 5: genedde). No instance of the concessive participle has been found in the more original prose. Each example in the Gospels is in translation of a Latin participle. Of the eight examples in the poems, that in Beowulf (2350: nearo neðende) is considered modal by K. Köhler; the other seven occur in poems known to be from Latin originals (one each in Elene, Genesis, Guðlac,
Juliana, Metres of Boethius; and two in the Phoenix). Moreover, the Boethius example translates a Latin participle. Compare chapters iv and v.


The appositive participle denoting a condition is probably due to Latin influence. Four examples occur in Early West Saxon, of which one corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (Bede 278. 18*), one to a Latin absolute participle (Boeth. 91. 8), while two have no correspondents in Latin (Boeth. 30. 25, 26). Of the two examples in Benedict, one answers to a Latin participle, and one is without a correspondent. The two examples in the Gospels are translations of Latin participles, as are also the four in Benet. Only one example occurs in the remainder of Anglo-Saxon prose. Of the sixteen examples in the poetry, two are in Beowulf (1368: geswenced; 1370: geflymed), one in Eadgar (11 A: geteled rimes) three in Genesis (geteled rime(s) in 1263, 1336, and in 2344), two in Exodus 232: geteled tireadigra, 372: geteled rime, three in Andreas (309 (?)): maxūm bedæled, 883: twelfe getealde, 1035: geteled rime), two in Elene (2: geteled rimes, 634: geteled rime), two in the Riddles (24. 15: unbunden, 24. 16: searosceled), and one in the Metrical Psalms (67. 17: geteled rime).* In ten of these examples, however, the same word (geteled nine times, getealde once) is used; and, besides, the participle is not unmistakably conditional. From its frequent occurrence in Anglo-Saxon and its occasional employment in Old Saxon (Heliand 1251: twelivi gitalda), this seems to have been a favorite locution; but its use appears to have been phraseo-

*The translation of this phrase by Grimm (computati numero, note to Elene 1085 in his Andreas u. Elene), by Grein (gezüll der Zal nach, in his Glossary sub v. rim), and by Kent (the number told, note to Elene 2) is, like the original, ambiguous, except that Kent does say that the participial phrase is used adverbially. Pratje (§ 158) considers the O. S. gitalda to be attributive.
logical rather than syntactical. The *Beowulf* examples, also, are doubtful. We know, too, that in Anglo-Saxon a condition is regularly denoted by a subordinated finite verb. I believe, therefore, that the use of the appositive participle to denote a condition is not a native English idiom, but was perhaps borrowed from the Latin.

See, too, chapters IV and V.

### III. The Co-ordinate Use.

The co-ordinate participle, in both its “circumstantial” and its “iterating” uses, is a direct importation from the Latin. No clear example of the co-ordinate participle occurs in *Gregory*, and only sixteen examples in the remainder of Alfred’s works, each time in direct translation of a Latin participle. Three examples occur in the *Chronicle* and five in *Wulfstan*, all present participles with an object, and all due to Latin influence (see p. 307 below). No example is found in the *Laws*. With about a dozen exceptions all the examples in *Benedict*, in the *Gospels*, and in *Benet* are translations of Latin participles. In the *Prose Psalms*, however, only one of the sixteen co-ordinate participles answers to a Latin participle; but thirteen are present participles with an object, and, therefore, cannot be native English (p. 307).

In the poems, only nineteen examples occur: one in *Beowulf* (916: flitende), one in *Andreas* (59: wepende), four in *Christ* (387: bremende, 992: vanende, 950: brecende, 1016: sorgende), two in *Guthlac* (401: murnende, 879: wedende), one in *Juliana* (662: weccende), one in *Spirit of Men* (82: hyegende), one in the *Harrowing of Hell* (91: murnende), three in the *Metres of Boethius* (20. 212: smeagende, 20. 214, 221: secende), and five in the *Metrical Psalms* (50. 56: cerrende, 104. 10: cve%ende = dicens, 105. 4: hyegende, 138. 17: cve%ende = dicitis, 146. 10: hropende = invocantibus). With the exception of *Beow. 916* (which may not be co-ordinate) and of *Spirit of Men* 82 (of which I do not know the source), all the examples are from
poems known to be based on Latin originals. Two of the examples are in direct translation of Latin participles (Metr. Ps. 104. 10: *cweðende* = *dicens*; 146. 10: *hropende* = *invocantibus*), to which may confidently be added a third (Metr. Ps. 138. 17: *cweðende*), though here answering to a finite verb, *dicitis*. Finally, the majority of the remaining examples (like *brecende, murnende, sorgende, wæccende, wanende, wedende*, and *wepende*) really waver between the co-ordinate use on the one hand and the adjectival and the modal on the other; indeed, *brecende, murnende, sorgende*, and *wanende* are expressly declared to be attributive by Hertel and by Furkert, and I have put them here despite their extreme doubtfulness merely to avoid the appearance of bending statistics to conformity with a theory. The few clear cases that remain of the co-ordinate use (like *cerrende, hyegende, secende*, and *smeagende*) may, I think, safely be attributed to Latin influence. The Latin co-ordinate participle is in Anglo-Saxon usually rendered by a co-ordinate finite verb (chapter iv).

The co-ordinate participle is likewise uncommon in the other Germanic languages (chapter v).

**The Governing Power of the Participle.**


I conclude with a remark that applies equally to each of the three uses of the appositive participle: the present appositive participle with a direct object, no matter whether its use is adjectival, adverbial, or co-ordinate, is always in imitation of the Latin. For the Anglo-Saxon present participle, when used appositively, seems originally not to have had the power of governing a direct object in construction,—a fact not noticed hitherto so far as I am aware. This statement is substantiated, I believe, by the following considerations:

1. Very few examples of a present participle having an object occur in Early West Saxon. Only eighteen examples
have been found in the works of Ælfric, distributed as follows: Bede 14, Gregory 2, Orosius 2.

2. With two exceptions each of these eighteen examples in Early West Saxon is a translation of a Latin appositive participle with a direct object. In one of the exceptional cases (Greg.¹ 171. 13: lærendæ (MS. C.: beóð lærendæ) = 126*: praedicando) the Anglo-Saxon participle translates a Latin gerund in the ablative; in the other (Oros.¹ 52. 27) the accusative seems to belong to the finite verb as well as to the participle (see Statistics).

3. In hundreds of instances the Early West Saxon translators (Ælfric and his helpers) clearly avoided turning the Latin participle with an object by an Anglo-Saxon participle with an object (see chapter iv).

4. An object is exceedingly rare in the more original prose works, there being but four examples in the Chronicles, one in the Laws, and six in Wulfstan; in all eleven instances.

5. In every one of these eleven examples the participle can be traced directly or indirectly to a Latin source. In the Chronicle, biddende (1083 E), cwëðendæ, which occurs twice (656 E, 675 E, both already quoted above), and gesæonde (1087 E), may be due to the Latin petens, dicens, and videns, which latter occur so often in the Vulgate New Testament, in Gregory’s Cura Pastoralis, in Bede’s Historia Ecclesiastica, and in other books that we may assume to have been in the hands of the compiler of MS. E., especially as this ms. is itself occasionally interlarded with Latin. Or, since it was written about 1121 (Plummer, ii, § 26), the editor of E. could have borrowed these participles from the Anglo-Saxon Gospels or from the works of Ælfric, in both of which they abound. The single example in the Laws (Whitr. C. 18: Þeost hine clænsie sylfæs soð, in his halgun hrægle ætforan wiofode, ðus cwëðendæ: “Úeritatem dico in Christo, non mentior”) may confidently be ascribed to Latin influence, not only that it is cwëðendæ, but that the participle is immediately followed by a quotation in Latin. As to Wulfstan, four of the examples
are cwe\text{"ende} (105. 30, 199. 15, 201. 8, 246. 11), which here as elsewhere is to be ascribed to Latin influence. *dicens* (*dicentes*) occurs five times in Wulfstan, though not in the above examples; twice it is translated by a co-ordinated finite (60. 14, 87. 15) and once by a subordinated finite verb (87. 18), and twice it is not translated at all (31. 32, 77. 3). Moreover, in two instances (201. 8, 246. 11) cwe\text{"ende} immediately precedes a quotation in Latin. The other two examples in Wulfstan (244. 7\textsuperscript{b}: *gemende*, 278. 9: \text{"sanejende* see Statistics) sound like translations from the ritual. Be this as it may, the participle may unhesitatingly be ascribed to Latin influence; for in Wulfstan there are interlarded with the Anglo-Saxon fourteen Latin present participles with an object.

6. Very few objects are found with the present participle in the poetry, only twenty-three in all, distributed as follows: *Beowulf* four (1227: dream *healdende*; 2106: fela *frigende* (but K. Köhler considers *fela* an adverb); 2350: nearo *ne\text{"ende}*, 1829: *\text{"see} *hettende*, which may be substantival, as K. Köhler construes it), Cynewulf’s *Christ* one (1271: *\text{"wræc} *winnende*, Grein\textsuperscript{1} and Gollancz\textsuperscript{1}*\textsuperscript{2}: *\text{"wræcwinnende*), *Andreas* three (570: dom *agende*, 491: mere *hrerendum*, mundum freorig, 300: wine *\text{"searfende}, Elene* two (1096: god *hergendra*, 1220: god *hergendum*), *Doomsday* one (112: *dea\seth beacenigende* tacen = *signa minantia mortem*), *Judith* one (272: mid *toðon torn *\text{"soligende*: cf. *Ps*. 111. 9: torn toðum S\text{"olian = *dentibus fremere*), *Daniel* two (355: feorh *nerigende*, 396: lean *sellende*), * Guthlac* one (1029: torn *\text{"soliende*: cf. Judith 272), *Juliana* one (6: god *hergendra*: cf. Elene 1096, 1220), *Spirit of Men* one (82: *hygcende* hælo rædes), *Wonders of Creation* two (14: *frigende* firæ cyanæ, 15: *seegende* searo-runa gespon), *Metrical Psalms* four (104. 10: cwe\text{"ende} = *dicens*; 138. 17: cwe\text{"ende} = *dicitis*; 105. 17: hæ\seth enstyrces big *etendes* = in similitudinem comendentis faenum; 105. 4: gemune us, drihten, on modsefan for\seth *hygcende* folces S\text{"ines = memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui). Of
these twenty-three participles, three (Doomsday 112, Metr. Ps. 104. 10 and 105. 17) are direct translations of corresponding Latin participles with an object; and to this class we may add a fourth (Metr. Ps. 138. 17), for the cweðende here, though corresponding to dicitis, must be due to dicens, which occurs not infrequently in the Latin Psalms. But what about the remaining nineteen examples? In the first place it is to be noticed that, except in four instances (Spirit of Men 82, Wonders of Creation 14 and 15, and Metr. Ps. 105. 4), the object immediately precedes its participle; that, though they are not so printed in Grein-Wülker, possibly we have accusative compounds (except in Beow. 1829), which compounds are in the main descriptive epithets, as are the hyphenated accusative compounds. And an object in an accusative compound seems to me to stand on an entirely different footing from an object in construction (cf. Strong, Logeman, Wheeler, p. 334, and Storch, p. 25). The accusative compound is often made because the Anglo-Saxon had no single word for the idea to be expressed, as when the translator of the Psalms (81. 2) turns the Latin peccator by syn-wyrcoende, etc. Oftener, perhaps, the compound is made for the sake of its picturesqueness; hence it is more frequent in poetry than in prose. That the participles which govern an object in composition do stand by themselves and that their governing an object in composition does not necessarily imply an antecedent power of governing an object in construction is attested, I think, by the fact that only one or two of the participles with an object in composition are found, also, with an object in construction. This principle by itself might account for most of the participles under consideration. But we see, further, that of these participles eleven occur in works known to be translations from the Greek or the Latin (Andreas 3, Christ 1, Elene 2, Judith 1, Daniel 2, Guthlac 1, Juliana 1), and the participles here may be due in part to the influence of the participles in the originals, even if at times, as in the two examples from the Elene, the Anglo-Saxon participles correspond, not to
Latin participles, but to Latin finite verbs. It will be observed, also, that in these eleven examples there are only eight different participles, the participle of hergian occurring three times and that of :solian twice. As to the four participles with objects following in construction, I think that they must be ascribed to foreign influence, though I cannot definitively trace that influence in three of the examples, as I do not know the sources of the Spirit of Men and the Wonders of Creation. Hycgende of Metr. Ps. 105. 4 may safely be ascribed to the influence of the Latin participles of the Psalter, though none is found in the particular verse corresponding to this line.

7. An object is likewise rare in the other Germanic languages, especially in High German and in Old Saxon, as will be shown in chapter v.

8. The only fact known to me that seems to militate against the assumption that the present participle in Anglo-Saxon had not, originally, the power of governing an object, is this: in the Prose Psalms there are thirteen examples of the present participle with an object, no one of which is known to have a Latin appositive participle as its original correspondent. All of these participles occur in the Introductions to the Psalms. And, in his very able discussion of the Paris Psalter (p. 64 ff.), Bruce has shown that these Introductions are paraphrases of Latin originals, principally of the argumenta in the commentary In Psalmorum Librum Exegesis. In the originals as given by Bruce I find but two correspondences to our participles: in Psalms 34 siofigende corresponds to a substantive in the ablative with a genitive modifier (David sang ðysne fœower and ðrîttigðan sealm, siofigende to Drihtne his yrmanða = occasione cerumnarum suarum David hunc psalmum in tempore Jeremise componit, etc.), and in Ps. 38 to an ablative absolute (David sang ðysne eahta and ðrîttigðan sealm, seofigende to Drihtne, mid hu manegum unrotnessum he was ofðryced under Sawle = Angentibus sub Saule mæroribus, hunc
psalmum cecinit etc.); while in the remaining eleven examples (37: andettende, 28: bebeodende, 33: gehatende, 39: gylpende (w. gen.), 32: herigende, 47: myliende, 37: seofigende: 43: seofigende, 32: ëanciende, 45: ëanciende, 31: wundnende (w. gen.)) there is no Latin correspondence. It will be observed, however, that, since one word is repeated four times (seofigende) and another twice (ëanciende), only seven words are involved; that, although there are no participles in the Latin corresponding to the Anglo-Saxon participles, participles are abundant in the Latin originals; that, as Bruce shows, the Prose Psalms are the work of an ecclesiastic; and that the Anglo-Saxon participles are those the Latin correspondents of which must have been often before the eyes and upon the lips of an ecclesiastic (such as confitens, postulans, benedicens, etc.). While, then, in the Prose Psalms the number of present participles with an object for which no immediate Latin source has been found, does seem to militate against the statement that originally in Anglo-Saxon the present participle had not the power of governing an object, in reality it does not: the author was an ecclesiastic and naturally molded his English translation on the pattern of what was at once his official language and his literary source.

9. In Late West Saxon, to be sure, especially in Ælfric and in the Gospels, there are numerous present participles with direct objects; but this fact does not invalidate the contention that in Anglo-Saxon the present participle had not the governing power originally. It will be observed, further, that in the Late West Saxon translations the participles with objects usually correspond to Latin participles with objects (25 times out of 36 in the Heptateuch, 117 times out of 122 in the Gospels, and 62 times out of 63 in Benet); and that in scores of instances the Latin participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon by a finite verb. The frequency of the participle with an object in Ælfric's Homilies and in his Lives of Saints is due, of course, to the fact that, as he tells us, these
works are translations from the Latin. The rareness of the present participle with an object in the poems and in the more original prose, especially in the late Wulfstan, would seem to indicate that, despite its great frequency in Ælfric and in the Gospels, this construction was never thoroughly naturalized in Anglo-Saxon.

10. Whenever it does govern an object, the present participle, as our examples show, has the same regimen as the verb from which it is derived. We find as object occasionally the genitive (Gregory\(^1\) 99. 4: wilnigende; Metr. Ps. 105. 4: hyegende; etc., etc.) and the dative (Bede\(^1\) 426. 30: biosmriendes; Ælf. Hom. ii. 128\(^b\): ðeowigende; etc., etc.), but usually the accusative (see Statistics).—In the preceding discussion as to the origin of the present participle with a direct object I have included not only the accusative, but all the cases that from the modern English standpoint appear to be direct objects and, in the Early West Saxon texts and in the poems, all participles with objects, whether direct or not.

2. The Preterite Participle.

1. With reference to the preterite participle, the word object, as stated in the prefatory note to the Statistics, is used to include not only the object in the ordinary sense, but also any noun modifier of the participle. We find with the preterite participle the object in the genitive (Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 442: ælces fylstes bedæled; Beow. 845: niða ofercumen; Gen. 2344: geteled rimes; etc., etc.), the dative (Ælf. Hom. l. 544\(^b\): deorum geferlachte; ib. ii. 314\(^b\): beboda mannum gesette; Bede\(^1\) 172. 26: ðisse fæmnan Gode gehalgodre weore; etc., etc.), and the instrumental (Bede\(^1\) 214. 11: onlysed ðy lichoman; ib. 344. 28: ðy betstan leðe geglenged; etc., etc.). This use of the preterite participle occurs both in the prose and in the poetry, but much more frequently in the latter. The construction seems to be thoroughly natural in Anglo-Saxon.
2. In the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature, however, I have found but one instance of an appositive preterite participle governing an accusative of the direct object, namely, *Luke 9. 55* (MSS. B. & C.): *hine bewend, he hig ðreade = conversus increpavit illos*. The remaining three MSS. and the corresponding Glosses here use a finite verb (see p. 225); and Professor Bright in his footnote to the above passage considers *bewend* a slavish translation of the Latin participle. It is scarcely possible to consider as original a construction of which but one example is found in our texts. I believe, therefore, that in Anglo-Saxon the past participle, when used appositively, did not have the power of governing a direct object.

I append tables showing the Latin correspondences of the Anglo-Saxon appositive participles, in their several uses, in the more definite Anglo-Saxon translations from the Latin.
### THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

#### BEDE.¹

**A.-S. Ptc. WITHOUT OBJECT.**

**LATIN EQUIVALENT.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### BOETHIUS.¹

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**GREGORY.**

A.-S. Ptc. without Object.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pres. 7</td>
<td>Pres. 3</td>
<td>Pres. 6</td>
<td>Pres. 0</td>
<td>Pres. 1</td>
<td>Pres. 1</td>
<td>Pres. 0</td>
<td>Pres. 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret. 4</td>
<td>Pret. 5</td>
<td>Pret. 6</td>
<td>Pret. 2</td>
<td>Pret. 0</td>
<td>Pret. 1</td>
<td>Pret. 0</td>
<td>Pret. 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tot. in A.-S.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**OROSIUS.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pres. 2</td>
<td>Pres. 7</td>
<td>Pres. 2</td>
<td>Pres. 0</td>
<td>Pres. 0</td>
<td>Pres. 0</td>
<td>Pres. 0</td>
<td>Pres. 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret. 1</td>
<td>Pret. 0</td>
<td>Pret. 2</td>
<td>Pret. 0</td>
<td>Pret. 0</td>
<td>Pret. 0</td>
<td>Pret. 0</td>
<td>Pret. 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tot. in A.-S.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1. \(A.-S.\) Ptc. without Object.

2. \(A.-S.\) Ptc. with Object.

**Latin Equivalent.**

- A.-S. Ptc. without Object.
- A.-S. Ptc. with Object.

---

1. *1 is in the dative.

2. *These are in the genitive.*
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 317

METRICAL PSALMS.

A.-S. Ptc. without Object.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres.........</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A.-S. Ptc. with Object.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres.........</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

BENEDICT.1

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pret.........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres.........</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### H E P T A T E U C H.

A. S. Ptc. without Object.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### THE GOSPELS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>15</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres...</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>75</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret...</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>20</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>19</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### METRES OF BOETHIUS.

#### A.-S. Ptc. without Object.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 1</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### A.-S. Ptc. with Object.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 1</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Latin Equivalent.

---

### BENET

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 16</td>
<td></td>
<td>14</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 15</td>
<td></td>
<td>15</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>15</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 8</td>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 3</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>{Pres.} 7</td>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---
# PROSE PSALMS.

**A.-S. Ptc. with Object.**

**Latin Equivalent.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres..........</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret..........</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>13</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

1. A.-S. Ptc. without Object.
CHAPTER IV.

THE ANGLO-SAXON RENDERING OF THE LATIN APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE.

When not turned by an appositive participle, the Latin appositive participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon as follows:—

I. NORMALLY BY A CO-ORDINATED FINITE VERB.

Most frequently the Latin appositive participle is rendered in Anglo-Saxon by a co-ordinated finite verb, though the texts vary widely, as is evident from the table in the footnote.\(^1\) That the co-ordinated finite verb is the most frequent rendering of the Latin appositive participle, while the subordinated finite verb is the commonest translation of the Latin absolute participle (see The Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 36), is doubtless due to the fact that not a few of the Latin appositive participles have what we have denominated the "co-ordinate" use; and this rendition is, therefore, more appropriate for the appositive than for the absolute participle.

\(^1\)The proportion of co-ordinated to subordinated finite verbs is as follows:—

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Bede}^1 & = 2.14:1. \\
\text{Benedict}^1 & = 1:1.97. \\
\text{Benet}^1 & = 1:2. \\
\text{Genesis}^1 & = 5.36:1. \\
\text{Gregory}^1 & = 1:1.56. \\
\text{Matthew}^1 & = 3:1. \\
\text{Poetical Psalms} & = 1:1.88. \\
\text{Prose Psalms} & = 1:1.27.
\end{align*}
\]

The ratio of the total co-ordinated to the total subordinated finite verbs in these works is 1.35:1.
But it must be allowed that no principle has been consistently followed throughout by the Anglo-Saxon translators; and that not infrequently this rendition ignores shades of meaning in the original, and at times does positive violence to the sense. Undoubtedly, however, the modification of the sense of the original is often deliberately made by the translator because of his different conception of the relative importance of the ideas denoted by the Latin verb and the Latin participle.

The co-ordinated verb is usually in the indicative, though occasionally in the optative or the imperative. As a rule, the co-ordinated verb occurs in the same sentence as the verb with which it is co-ordinated, but occasionally it stands in an independent sentence. The clauses are generally united by a conjunction, but sometimes there is no connective.

A few examples will suffice to illustrate the range of the construction:

(1) Co-ordinated Indicative: (a) With a verb in the same sentence: Bede² 21. 9: relinquens reuersus est = 40. 1: 

wæs forlætende ʒ hwearf; Greg.² 62. 7: Hinc per Isaiam Dominus admonet, dicens = 91. 19: forðam myndgode Dryhten ʒ Surh Essaiam ʒone witgan ʒ cwæð; Mat. 12. 25: 
sciens dixit = wiste ʒ cwæð; Gen.² 22. 3: Abraham consurgens stravit etc. = A. aras . . . and ferde.—Other examples: 

Bede² 98. 34 (122. 9), 100. 13 (124. 21); Greg.² 24. 2 (45. 13), 76. 18, 21 (111. 6, 9); Gen. 42. 7, 9; Mat. 24. 2, 25. 18; etc., etc.—(b) With a verb in another sentence: Greg.² 70. 17: Coram testamenti area Dominum consulit, exemplum ... rectoribus præbendi = 103. 6; fraeũ ʒæs Dryhten beforan ʃære earce. . . He astealde on ʃæm bisene; Gen. 42. 3; etc.

(2) Co-ordinated Optative: Greg.² 394. 23: ne in semetipsis torpentes opere alios excitent voce = 461. 15: ðyleas he oðre awoke mid his wordum, ʒ himself aslawige godra weorca; Bede² 112. 12, 13: adueniens . . . peruolauerit, qui . . . ingrediens . . . exierit = 136. 1, 2: Cume an spearwa,
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 323

... fleo y cume... ut gewite.—Other examples: *Bened.* 56. 2 (29. 6), 56. 8 (29. 12); 58. 16 (31. 11); *Mat.* 22. 24; etc.

(3) Co-ordinated Imperative: *Greg.* 2. 150. 24, 25: Et vos domini eadem facite illis, *remittentes* minas, *scientes* quod et illorum et vester Dominus est in coelis = 203. 1: Ge hlaforðas, doð ge eowrum monnum *sæt* ilce be hira andefne & *gemetgíað* soney sêran; *geðenað* *sæt* ægðer ge hira hlaforð ge eowor is on hefenum.—Other examples: *Mat.* 2. 5. 24, 9. 13, 10. 7; *Ps. Th.* 2. 17. 48; etc.

II. FREQUENTLY BY A SUBORDINATED FINITE VERB.

Almost as frequently as by a co-ordinated finite verb the Latin appositive participle is translated by an Anglo-Saxon subordinated finite verb, introduced by a conjunction that indicates the relation sustained by the Latin participle to the principal verb. The dependent verb in Anglo-Saxon is more commonly in the indicative, though occasionally in the optative; while at times the form of the verb is ambiguous. The use of the indicative or the optative rests upon the well-known distinction between these two moods, but the principle is not infrequently ignored. I cite examples of each mood. In the main, the examples are arranged according to the use of the appositive participle in Latin:

1. The Latin Temporal Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by a temporal conjunction or conjunctional phrase: usually by *sa*, *sa* *sa*, *sonne*; less frequently by *aftor* *sæm* *æe*, *aftor* *son* *sæt*, *míd* *sy*, *oð* *sæt*, *sithan*, *sona* *sua*, *swa*, *sua* *swide* *swe*, *sa* *hwile* *æce*.

Examples:

(1) Indicative:—*sa*: *Mat.* 2. 27. 24: *Uيدَنَا* autem pilatus... lavit manus = *Da* *gezeah* p... *sa*... he *ðwoh* his handa; *ib.* 8. 8; *Bede* 91. 5 (112. 2), 91. 30 (112. 26); *Greg.* 70. 23 (103. 11); *Gen.* 2. 28. 18, 30. 9; etc.; *sa* *sa*: *Bede* 87. 4 (106. 24); *Greg.* 136. 5 (181. 17); *Gen.* 3. 8; etc.; *sonne*: *Greg.* 2. 8* (27. 17), 32. 15 (57. 2); *Ps. Th.* 21. 11; *Bened.* 152. 12 (85. 9); etc.; *aftor* *sæm* *æc*: *Greg.* 216. 23
(287. 9); after son ṣæt: Bede\textsuperscript{2} 11. 25 (28. 7); mid ᵠy: Bede\textsuperscript{2} 84. 5 (102. 30); ọsọọọt: Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 102. 23 (143. 17); siụụụan: Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 78. 16 (113. 11), Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 132. 18 (70. 9); sona swa: Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 32. 17 (57. 6); swa swe swe swa: Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 68. 17 (99. 21); ọa hwile ọe: Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 344. 16 (421. 28.—(2). Optative: ọonne: Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 32. 11: Injuriam non facere, sed factam patienter sufferre = 17. 11: ac ọonne him mon yfel do, he seal gedyldelice arefnian; Bede\textsuperscript{2} 83. 6 (100. 33); Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 322. 10 (403. 14); Mat.\textsuperscript{2} 6. 7; ọs ọọt: Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 202. 14 (131. 6); siụụụan: Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 138. 14 (73. 9); sona swa: Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 138. 14 (73. 9); swa: Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 158. 11 (91. 13).

Note.—The Latin Co-ordinate Participle, though normally translated into Anglo-Saxon by a co-ordinated finite verb (see above, p. 321), is sometimes translated by a subordinated finite verb, which clause is temporal. Thus in Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 156. 3 (increpat, dicens = 207. 14 tælde, ọa he cwæd) we have as the translation of dicens the dependent ọa he cwæd instead of the more common independent and he cwæd (Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 98. 16 (137. 16), etc.). I have noted about thirty examples of dicens = ọa he cwæd in Greg.\textsuperscript{2} and about forty examples of dicens = and he cwæd. Besides, the Anglo-Saxon dependent temporal clause is substituted for other co-ordinate participles of the Latin.

2. The Latin Relative Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by a relative pronoun. Examples:—(1) Indicative: Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 72. 14: Lectiones ad ipsum deum pertinentes dicantur = 39. 9: reedings syn gesunge, ọe to ọam freolsdæge belimpað; ib. 2. 6, 8 (1. 7, 9); Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 18*\textsuperscript{2} (37. 22); Bede\textsuperscript{2} 92. 8 (114. 6), 94. 28 (118. 12); Gen. 23. 17; Mat. 22. 11, 25. 29, 25. 34; Ps. Th.\textsuperscript{2} 3. 6; etc., etc.—(2) Optative: Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 44. 8: Scurrilitates vero vel verba otiosa et risum moventia, æterna clausura in omnibus locis damnamus = 22. 5: gegafspære and idele word and ọa word, ọe leahter astyrien... we... forbeodað; Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 126. 26 (173. 8); Bede\textsuperscript{2} 57. 17 (80. 25).
3. The Latin Causal Clause is rendered by a subordinated finite verb introduced by forðæm, forðæm ðe, forðon, forðon ðe, mid ðy. Examples:—(1) Indicative: forðæm: Greg.² 50. 14: ad exemplum aliis constitutus = 77. 13: Forðæm he bið gesett to bisene ðeðrum monnum: Ps. Th. 18. 7;—forðon: Greg.² 52. 9 (79. 10); Bede² 6. 9 (2. 19); forðæmðe: Greg.² 210. 1 (276. 15 Cot.), ib. 232. 12 (305. 2); Bede² 116. 3 (142. 1); for ðon ðe: Bede² 309. 10 (432. 30); mid ðy: Bede² 12. 13 (28. 18) (or Temporal?).

4. The Latin Conditional Clause is translated by a subordinate finite verb introduced by gif. Examples:—(1) Indicative: Greg.² 44. 6: Pupilla namque oculi... albuginem tolerans nil videt = 69. 18: gif hine ðone ðæt fleah mid calle ofergæð, ðonne ne mæg he noht gesion; ib. 208. 25 (277. 8); Bede² 98. 8 (120. 22); Bened.² 86. 17 (46. 16), 96. 20 (52. 4); Mat.² 21. 22.—(2) Optative: Greg.² 22. 23: Cui nole[n]ti in faciem mulier spuit = 45. 2: Gif hire ðonne se wiðsace, ðonne is eynn ðæt him spiwe ðæt wif on ðæt nebb.

5. The Latin Concessive Clause is turned by a subordinate finite verb introduced by ðeah, ðeah ðe. Examples:—(1) Indicative: ðeah: Greg.² 192. 3: non levabo caput, saturatus afflictione et miseria = 253. 8: ... ðeah ic eom gefylled mid broce & mid iermðum.—(2) Optative: ðeah: Greg.² 34. 19: co-actus = 59. 10: ðeah hiene mon niede; ib. 42. 18 (67. 23); Ps. Th.² 3. 5; ðeah ðe: Greg.² 68. 7 (99. 9), Bede² 57. 29 (82. 4), 272. 28 (368. 16).

6. The Latin Final Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by to ðæm ðæt, to ðy ðæt, ðæt, ðæt leas, ðæ leas ðe, ðylæs. Examples:—(1) Indicative: I find no example.—(2) Optative: ðæt: Mat.² 14. 15: dimitte turbas, ut euntes in castella emant sibi escas = forlæt ðas mænegeo ðæt hi faron... j him mete bioge; Greg.² 122. 19 (167. 17); to ðæm ðæt: Greg.² 246. 20 (319. 20); to ðy ðæt: Bened.² 204. 15 (132. 15); ðæ leas: Mat.² 13. 29; ðæ leas ðe: Gen.² 32. 11; ðylæs: Greg.² 90. 2, 4 (127. 14, 15), 180. 13 (239. 2).
7. The Latin Modal Clause is turned by a subordinate finite verb introduced by *swa swa*, *swelce*. Examples:—
(1) Indicative: *swa swa*: Greg.² 348. 14: *ut qui voluptatibus delectatus discessimus, fletibus amaricati redeamus* = 425. 14: *sætte us biterige sio hreowsung, swa swa us ær swetedon ða synna*; Mat.² 9. 36; etc., etc.—(2) Optative: *swelce*: Greg.² 156. 6: *quasi compatiem* = 207. 17: *suelce he einsiðe him bære*; ib. 80. 22 (117. 1); 94. 30 (135. 1); Bened.² 180. 6 (113. 25).

8. The Latin Consecutive Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by *swa swet*, *swet*, *swetel*. Examples:—(1) Indicative: *swa swet*: Mat.² 13. 2: *congregate sunt ad eum turbæ multæ, ita ut in naviculam ascendens sedet = mycele mænigeo weron gesamnade to him swa swet he eode on scypp ðææ swæt*; Bede² 278. 11, 12 (378. 20, 21); *swet*: Bede² 116. 4 (142. 2); Bened.² 188. 15 (124. 5); *swetel*: Greg.² 182. 7 (241. 3).—(2) Optative: *swet*: Greg.² 34. 21: *caveat ne acceptam pecuniam in sudarium ligans de ejus occultatione judicetur* = 59. 13: *healde hine swet he ne cnytte swatline*; ib. 38. 14 (63. 15), 398. 20 (463. 13); *swetel*: Greg.² 164. 23 (219. 7); *swa swet*: Bened.² 12. 4 (5. 24).

III. By a Prepositional Phrase.

Not infrequently the Latin appositive participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon by a prepositional phrase.

(1) The phrase denotes Manner, Means, or Instrumentality, and is introduced by *mid, in, þurh*. Examples:—*mid*: Bened.² 52. 19: *subsequentur gaudentes et dicentes* = 27. 11: *þus æfterfylgendlice mid blisse elypiað*; ib. 104. 9: *adjutus* = 55. 16: *mid heora fullume*; Greg.² 274. 1: *iratus* = 353. 20: *mid his ierre*; in: Bede² 239. 15: *Cristus incarnatus* = 310. 26: *Crist in menniscum lichoman; þurh*: Bened.² 178. 15: *admonitus* = 113. 13: *þurh myngunge.*
(2) The phrase denotes Time, and is introduced by after, be, on, under. Examples:—after: Bede² 110. 23: eidem perempto = 132. 14: after his siege; on: Bened.² 88. 12: dormientes = 47. 11: on sleepe; Greg.² 218. 15 = 289. 10; under: Bede² 114. 26: albatis = 140. 4: under crisman (or Modal?).

(3) The phrase denotes Cause, and is introduced by for. Examples:—Bened.² 96. 20: excommunicatus = 52. 5: for amansunge; Greg.² 28. 12 (51. 14); Greg.² 68. 18: miseratus = 99. 22: for mildheortnesse; Greg.² 124. 5: under: Bede² 114. 26: albati = 140. 4: for ege; Gen. 19. 29: Deus recordatus Abrahamæ liberavit Lot = alysde L. for Abrahamæ; Gen. 45. 3: nimio terrore perterriti = for ege.

(4) The phrase denotes Condition and is introduced by butan: Mat.² 22. 25: non habens semen = butan bearne.

IV. BY A VERB IN THE INFINITIVE MOOD.

Occasionally the Latin appositive participle is translated by an infinitive. Examples:—(1) The Uninflected Infinitive: (a) Without a subject: Bened.² 10. 13: Et si fugientes gehenna poenas ad vitam volumus pervenire perpetuam = 5. 5: And gif he hellewites susla forbugan willa$ and to ecum life euman; Bede² 99. 25: uerbis delectatus promisit = 122. 33: Æa ongon he lustfullian sæs bishops wordum and gehCeht; etc.; (b) With a subject: Bede² 46. 5: ad iussionem regis residentes . . . praedicarent = 58. 28: Da het se cyning hie sittan . . . and hie . . . bodedon; Mat.² 27. 26.—(2) The Inflected Infinitive: Greg.² 178. 25: ita nonnullam quibusdam audita vera noceurunt = 237. 11: sua dere$ eac hwilum sumum mon- num sæt so$ to gehierenne; Greg.² 300. 15: ut cum . . . tunc quasi a nobismetipis foras etiam alios instruentes ex- eamus = 385. 9: Ac eft Æonne . . . Æonne bio we of Æere ceastre ut aferene, sæt is of urum agnum inge$once, Ære
men to læranne; Bede\(^2\) 8. 10: omnes ad quos hæc eadem historia peruenire poterit . . . legentes siue audientes suppliciter precor, ut = 486. 8: ic eaðmodlice bidde . . . ðætte to eallum ðæs ylce stær to bécyme . . . to rædanne oððe to gehyranne ðæt, etc.; Bede\(^2\) 54. 24: si . . . actura gratias intrat = 76. 12: ðæah ðæ heo . . . Gode ðoncéunge to dønne . . . gange; Ps. Th.\(^2\) 9. 12.

V. BY AN ATTRIBUTIVE PARTICIPLE.

The Latin appositive participle is at times translated by an Anglo-Saxon attributive participle. Examples:—Bened.\(^2\) 24. 13: ut non solum detrimenta gregis sibi commissi non patiatur = 14. 8: ðæt he him ðæs befæsten eowdes nanne æfwirðlan næbbe; ib. 92. 14 (49. 18), 146. 11 (78. 10); Greg.\(^2\) 22. 12 (43. 14), 126. 7 (171. 11); Mat. 17. 14.

VI. BY AN ABSOLUTE PARTICIPLE.

Rarely the Latin appositive participle is translated by an Anglo-Saxon absolute participle. Examples:—Mat.\(^2\) 13. 1: In illo die exiens Jesus de domo, sedebat secus mare = On þam dæge þam helènde ut-gangendum of huse he set wið þa sæ; Mk.\(^2\) 5. 2, 16. 12; Mat.\(^2\) 17. 14; Lk.\(^2\) 1. 63, 17. 7; Oros.\(^3\) 33. 29 (34. 1). (See Abs. Ptc. in A.-Ś., pp. 8, 13.)

VII. BY AN ADVERB.

Occasionally the Latin appositive participle is turned by an adverb. Examples:—Greg.\(^2\) 360. 18: Hinc iterum iratus dicit = 435. 11: he cwæð eft ierrenge; Greg.\(^2\) 402. 18, 21: cautus . . . sollicitus = 467. 1, 3: værllice . . . geornlice; Ps. Th.\(^2\) 16. 10 : projicientes = forsewenlice.

VIII. BY AN ADJECTIVE.

The Latin appositive participle is at times translated by an Anglo-Saxon adjective. Examples:—Bede\(^2\) 108. 32 : scio . . .
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 329

quaœuentura tibi in proximo mala formidas = 128. 25: ie wat . . . hwylc toweard yfel ðu ðe in neahnesse forhtast; Bede² 82. 5: adlatus est quidam . . . oculorum luce privatus = 100. 3: ða lædde mon forð sumne blindne mon; Mat.² 8. 16: multos daemonia habentes = manege deofol-seoce.

IX. By a Substantive.

Rarely a Latin appositive participle is represented in Anglo-Saxon by a substantive. Examples:—Bened.² 116. 7: Mensis fratrum edentium lectio deesse non debet = 62. 3: Gebroðra gereorde æt hyra mysum ne seal beon butan rædinge; Greg.² 160. 16, 17: Egit . . . doctor, ut prius audirent laudati, quod recognoscerent, et postmodum, quod exhortati sequerentur = 213. 20. 21: Sua gedyde se . . . lareow æst hie æresæ gehier- don ða heringe ðe him licode forðæm æst hie æfter ðæm ðe lusðlicor gehierden ða lare.
CHAPTER V.

THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIIPLE IN THE OTHER GERMANIC LANGUAGES.

I.

In the main, the uses of the appositive participle in the other Germanic Languages tally with those found in Anglo-Saxon. My discussion must be brief not only because of the want of space but also because of the lack of a comprehensive treatment of the appositive participle in these languages. But the treatises of Douse and of Gering answer admirably for Gothic; those of Falk and Torp, of Lund, and of Nygaard for the Scandinavian languages; those of Dietz, O. Erdmann, K. Förster, Mourek, Rannow, Seedorf, Seiler, and Wunderlich, for Old High German; that of Barz for Middle High German; and those of Behaghel and Pratje for Old Saxon. Mourek, Pratje, and Rannow do not classify their examples according to use. Perhaps it is not improper to state that, while this chapter is based on the statistics of others, the interpretation thereof is my own.

1. Gothic.

In the Introduction I have already commented on the unwisdom of Gering’s excluding the adjectival (relative) participle from the appositive use. Ignoring this, we find the appositive participle freely used adjectivally, adverbially, and co-ordinately (though Gering does not use the last term). As Lücke has shown with reference to the absolute participle, so it is with the appositive participle: Ulfilas was a slavish translator; and his usage represents, I believe, the genius
of the classical (especially Greek) and not of the Germanic languages (see II. below). But at times even Ulfilas turns the Greek appositive participle by a finite verb, Gering (p. 313 ff., 399 ff.) giving not a few examples of the same (over fifty subordinate and twenty-five co-ordinate verbs); whereas the turning of a Greek finite verb by a Gothic appositive participle is very rare (four * examples, according to Gering, p. 401).

I append a few examples from Gering: I. Adjectival (Relative) (Gering's attributive): Mat. 8. 9: Jah auk ik manna im habands uf waldonfja meinamama gadrantiins = Kal ἡγο ἀνθρωπὸς εἰμι . . . ἐχον υπ' ἐμαυτὸν στρατιώτας; L. 2. 13: manegi harjis himinakundis, hazjandame gup jah gipandane = Πλῆθος στρατιάς οὐρανίου αἰνοῦντων τῶν θεῶν καὶ λεγόντων; II. Adverbial: Mat. 27. 63: qaf nahu lihabands = εἴπεν ἐτί ξόν (temporal); Mk. 6. 20: Herodis ohts sis Iohannen, kunnands ina wair garaihtana jah weihana = Ἡρώδης ἐφοβείτο τῶν Ἰουννην, εἰδὼς αὐτῶν ἀνδρά δίκαιον καὶ ἄγιον (causal); J. 6. 6: ἡπαθ ἤαn qaf fraisdands ina = Τοῦτο δὲ ἔλεγεν πειράζον αὐτῶν (final); Mat. 6. 17: ἢρ ρυ fastands salbo haubif pein = Σῦ δὲ νηστεύον ἐλευθαῖον τὴν κεφαλὴν (conditional according to Gering, but may be temporal); Lk. 2. 48: sa atta pein jah ik winnandona sokidedum ῥυκ = Ὁ Πατὴρ σου καγὼ δινώμενοι ἐξητομέν σε (modal: manner); Mk. 6. 5: siukaim handuns galajjandz gahailida = ἀρρώστοις ἐπιθείς τὰς χείρας ἐθέραπευσεν (modal: means, Gering's instrumental); J. 7. 15: hwaiwa sa bokos kann unuslaisips? = Πῶς ὁτὸς γράμματα οἶδεν μή μεμαθηκὼς (concessive, Gering's limitative); III. Co-ordinate (not treated by Gering as such): Mat. 6. 31: Ni maurnaip nu gipandans = Μὴ οὖν μεριμνήσετε λέγοντες; Mk. 9. 12: ἢρ is andhafs jands qaf du im = ὁ δὲ ἀποκριθεῖς εἴπεν αὐτοῖς.

*But since, in making this statement, Gering limits himself to the adverbial uses of the appositive participle, there must be more than four examples in all. I have myself found about this number in Mark.
2. The Scandinavian Languages.

According to the statements of Lund, of Falk and Torp, and of Nygaard, the appositive participle has had the same history in the Scandinavian languages as in Anglo-Saxon.

As Lund’s Oldnordisk Ordfojningslære* is out of print, it is best, perhaps, to quote in full what he has to say of the appositive use of the participle in Old Norse, together with his examples (§ 149): “Tillægsformerne, især den handlende, føjes (som hosstillet) til et navneord i sætningen for at betegne en med hovedhandlingen samtidig (eller fortidig) handling eller tilstand, der står således i forbindelse med hovedhandlingen, at den ikke alene kan bestemme dens tidsforhold, men også dens måde og andre omstændigheder, som grund, anledning, betingelse, modsætning osv., hvilke forhold almindelig ellers (som på Dansk) udtrykkes ved bisætninger (med bindeord eller henførende udtryk) eller ved en forholdsordsforbindelse. Skønt denne brug ikke er meget almindelig (som i Græsk og Latin), tjener den dog ikke sjælden til at give talen korthed og bøjelighed, da tillægsformerne på denne måde kunne føjes ikke alene til sætningens grundord, men også til genstanden, hensynet og andre led deri.” Then follow his examples: Hlæjandi Völundr høfsk at løpti, grátandi Böðvildr gekk ør eyju. Völundarkv. 27.-(Hann) haf'di tekit lax ör forsinum ok át blundandi. Sn. Edd. 72.—Ór hans sidu sofanda tók guð eitt rif ok fylldi rúm rífsins með holði. Gisl. 44, 66.—Sá sem norronæði, kennandi sinn fátekdóm ok vanføri tók þetta verk upp á sik af boðskap ok forsögna fyrri sagðs virðu-ligs herra. Stjórn 2.—Sá er kaupir víts vitandi (sciens, med sit vidende, således at han ved) Grág. i., 15.—Hón drottningin þetta sjandi (hóc videns, ved at se dette) fylldist spáleiksanda ok mælti svá. Biskupa S. 217.—At fengnum andsvörum spurdra luta ok ofraðu miklu fè. Alex. 51.—Drukku jarlar

* For the loan of this book I am indebted to Professor James Morgan Hart, who also kindly called my attention to the work of Falk and Torp.
öl þegjandi (tiende a: uden at råbe dertil), en òependanda òlker stóð. · Hervor. 41.—In the next paragraph (§ 150) Lund discusses the attributive use of the participle; and some of the examples there given would come under our "adjectival" use of the appositive participle.

In their recent work, Dansk-Norskens Syntax i Historisk Fremsstilling, Falk and Torp briefly treat the appositive use of the participle not only in Old Norse but also in the modern Scandinavian languages. Their statement is an admirable supplement to that of Lund, and is worthy of quotation (§ 67. 3): "Apposition af participier forholder sig væsentlig som adjektiverne. Ved præsens particip forekommer appositiv brug i oldnorsk kun i lærd stil: hon misgørdi etandi af tressins øveati; taladi på fyrrir sinum mønnum svæ målandi. Endnu er udtryk som: jeg gik igang med arbeidet stolende paa hans løfte; trodsende alle hindringer trængte han frem, fremmede for den øgte folkelige udtryksmaade. Den ældre kancellistil yndede saadanne vendinger: paa eet andhæt stedt talindis om bandt siger han saa (P. Elies.); T. gick vd emod dennem berendis hostiam (Abs. Ped.); andre breffue lydendis at (St. D. Pr.); jeg befaler dig Gud ønskendis dig ald lyksalighed (Pont.); befalendiss dig hermed gud og himmelen (Chr. VI.). Ved fortidsparticip findes appositiv brug i oldnorsk klassik prosa kun i et parenkle udtryk: þá lagu þar fyrrir Danir komnir ór leiðangeri. I lærde skrifter forekommer ogsaa foranstillet apposition: utgenginn af skóla heldr hann sik ná upp a leiñmanna hátt; ór sinu valdi kastadr dó hann i myrkvastofu. Endnu er forbindelser som: forladt af alle døde han i ensomhed; opbragt herover pønsede han paa hævn, ganske uhjembelige og fremmede for godt landsmaal. Uden anstød er derimod den efterstillede apposition i udtryk som: Gud sendte sin søn, født af en kvinde; til en by, kaldet Ephrem. I den ældre kunstige stil paastræffes vendinger som: rigdom ther jilde brughet giffuer orsage till alwerdsins homodt (P. Elies.); aalije, ther mange menniskir snwrvde met worde karscke (ib.). Sml. § 139, 1." The section cited runs:
"Appositivt particip til betegnelse af den en hovedsætning underordnede handling, erstattende en relativ, tids- eller aarsagssætning, er i det hele og store en fremmed brug i nordisk: se § 67, 3. I vort skriftsprag er denne udtryksmaade ikke sjelden: han gik bort, pønsende paa hævn; ankommen til byen, gik han straks ned til havnen. I dagligtalen anvendes den aldrig. Anderledes hvor participiet betegner subjektets tilstand under handlingen. Her fungerer det som adjektiv, idet dette kan anvendes paa samme maade: Græn grætandi gekk or tůni; han gik slagen derfra (sml. han gik glad bort); se § 68, 2 b."

Nygaard considers that the use of the participle in Norse prose is largely due to Latin influence. As I have not had access to his article on Den Lærde Stil i den Nørrøne Prosa, I quote the summary of the Berlin Jahresbericht for 1896: "Der gelehrte stil zeigt sich in der nordischen prosa: 1. in der erweiterung des gebrauchs des part. præsens, das in volkstümlichen stile nicht allzu häufig angewendet wird. Auf dem gebrauch dieses part. hat im gelehrten stil das lat. part. præsens und das gerundium eingewirkt. 2. Auch der gebrauch des part. præt. ist in dem gelehrten stil wesentlich erweitert. Namentlich wird das part. præt. häufig mit präpositionen (at, epir) verbunden; wir haben hier eine konstruktion, die dem lat. abl. absolut. entspricht."

3. High German.

(1) Old High German.

I have been surprised to find how closely the uses of the appositive participle in Old High German correspond to those in Anglo-Saxon. True, Tatian has no Anglo-Saxon counterpart, for he is as slavish in following his original as is Ulfilas; and has hundreds of examples of the uu-Germanic co-ordinate participle. But the more original Otfrid and Isidor are quite different. In Otfrid and Notker the modal participle was
so common that it developed an adverbial ending in -o (O. Erdmann, Syntax der Sprache Otfrids, p. 219), as in Otfrid, iv., 12. 53: er fuor ilonto; v., 9. 14: ir get sus dru rento. The modal use is found, too, in Isidor. In Isidor and in Otfrid, again, the adjectival use of the preterite participle is common, while that of the present is comparatively rare, being limited as in Anglo-Saxon to participles with slight verbal power. The other uses are rare in both writers. Isidor, for instance, has only four examples of the co-ordinate participle, all from quedan; two are in direct translation of the Latin dicens, and we may add also the other two, though dicens does not occur in these two passages. But eighteen times Isidor translated a Latin co-ordinate participle by a finite verb (nine co-ordinated and nine subordinated). Clearly, then, if Isidor and Otfrid are true types, the co-ordinate participle was as unnatural in Old High German as in Anglo-Saxon. In the Benediktinerregel, finally, the present participle often answers to a Latin gerund in the ablative (Seiler, p. 470).

Examples: (1) Adjectival (Relative):—Tatian, 88. 2: Uuas sum man dar drizog inti ahto iar habenti in sinero unmahti = Erat autem quidam homo ibi triginta octo annos habens in infirmitate sua; Otfrid, iii., 20: 1: gisah einan man, blintan giboranan; Tatian, 107. 1: Inti uuas sum arm betalari gimen nit Lazarus = Et erat quidam mendicus nomine Lazarus; (2) Adverbial:—Otfrid, i., 17. 73: sie wurtun slafente lon engilon gimanote (temporal); Tatian, 192. 2: Inti anderu managu bismaronti quadun in inan = Et alia multa blasphemantes dice bant in eum (modal: manner); Tatian, 12. 3: inti inan ni findanti fuorun uuidar zi Hierusalem inan swochenti (causal and final); Otfrid, v., 12. 26: er ingiang ungimerrit, duron so bisperrit (concessive); Otfrid, i., 8. 6: thin racha, sus gidan, nam thes huares thana wan (conditional); (3) Co-ordinate:—Otfrid, i., 13. 18: barg thin wort, in herzen ahtonti; Tatian, 6. 6: Maria uuarlilho ghielt allu thisiu uuort ahtonti in ira herzen = M. autem conservabat omnia verba haec conferens in corde suo; Tatian, 54. 6: antvvrrententi quad zi in = re-
spondens dicit ad illos; Tatian, 81. 2: sprah in quedenti = locutus est eis dicens.

(2) Middle High German.

The story is the same in Middle High German, if we may take Barz's statistics of the Nibelungenlied and Iwein as true for Middle High German in general. Here the adverbial participle denoting manner is very common, and we meet with sorgende, swigende, unwizzende, etc., as in Anglo-Saxon. But the adverbial participle denoting means is practically unknown, and the other uses of the adverbial appositive participle are rare. Those cited as temporal and as final occur in close connection with verbs of motion, and waver between predicative and adverbial uses. The adjectival (relative) use is almost exclusively confined to the preterite participle. The coordinative use is not known.

Examples from Barz:—(1) Adjectival (Relative): Nib. 2. 3: ein vil edel magedin, daz . . . sin, Kriemhilt geheizen; Nib. 833. 2: die truogen liehte pfelle . . ., geworht in Arabin; (2) Adverbial: Nib. 1065. 1: vil lute seriende daz liut gie mit im dan (temporal); Nib. 2333. 3: ez giengen iuwer helde zum disem gademe gewafent wol ze vlize (temporal); Nib. 502. 3: sorgende † walte er (modal: manner); Iw. 3227: er stal sich swigende † dan (modal); Iw. 6113: daz ist unwizzende † geschehen (modal); Iw. 531: daz ich suochende rite einen man (final); ib. Iw. 4163, 5775.

(3) New High German.

The fullest recent treatment accessible to me of the appositive participle in New High German is that by von Jagemann in his Elements of German Syntax; of which this section of

*Paul does not treat the construction.
† Barz (p. 22) puts this under Adverbialer Gebrauch des Particiops, not Appositiver Gebrauch.
my paper is scarcely more than a summary. In § 124, 4a, he gives the three following examples of the appositive participle in New High German: "She sat weeping by the bedside of her mother = Sie sass weinend am Bette ihrer mutter; He entered the room in silence = Schweigend trat er in das Zimmer; Pierced by an arrow he sank to the ground = Von einem Pfeile getroffen sank er zu Boden." To me, however, the participle in the first example appears to be used predicatively. The remaining two are appositive, the former denoting manner and the latter cause. In § 125, notwithstanding, we are told: "Present participles should not be used in German* to express adverbial relations of time, cause, or manner."* I do not know how to reconcile the italicized part of this statement with example two above, unless for the moment Professor von Jagemann had in mind the statement made in § 124, 3c: "A limited number of present participles are no longer felt as such, but as common adjectives, and they may therefore be used predicatively and adverbially*: He is absent = Er ist abwesend; She sang charmingly = Sie sang reizend;" and thought that he had put Schweigend trat er in das Zimmer under § 124, 3c instead of § 124, 4a. Be this as it may, his statement that the present participle may be used adverbially is in strict keeping with the tradition not only of High German, but also of the Germanic languages in general, so far as it is used to denote manner. The non-use of the present participle to denote time and cause is what our preceding investigation has led us to expect.

Again, we learn that the "adjectival" use of the present appositive participle is not allowed (§ 124, 4b): "This [i. e., the appositive] use of a participle, however, is not permitted in the numerous cases in which an important limitation of a noun is to be expressed. The participle should then be used attributively, before the noun, preceded by its own qualifiers

*The italics are mine.
(see § 231, 2); or else a relative clause should be substituted:
The book lying on the table was a Greek Grammar = Das auf dem Tische liegende Buch war eine griechische Grammatik, or Das Buch, das auf dem Tische lag etc.; The candidate
receiving the largest number of votes is elected = Der die meisten Stimmen erhaltende Candidat (or derjenige Candidat, welcher die meisten Stimmen erhält,) ist erwählt; I prefer an edition of Molière's works printed in France = Ich ziehe eine in Frankreich gedruckte Ausgabe von Molière's Werken (or eine Ausgabe von ... die in Frankreich gedruckt ist,) vor."

Finally, we are told that the "co-ordinate" use of the present participle is not common* (§ 124, 4c): "A present participle should not, ordinarily, be used to express an idea as important as, or more important than, that expressed by the finite verb, but a co-ordinate verb should be used instead of the participle: He sat at his desk all day, writing letters = Er sass den ganzen Tag an seinem Pulte und schrieb Briefe; He stood on the mountain, looking down into the valley = Er stand auf dem Berge und sah ins Thal hinunter." This usage is in strict accord with that of Early West Saxon.

No specific statement is made as to the governing power of the present participle when used appositively. But, from § 124. 4b & c above quoted, we learn that the present appositive participle seldom governs an object in New High German, the participle with an object usually being attributive.

As to the past participle, von Jagemann has this to say (§ 126): "Although past participles are more frequently used in German to express adverbial relations than present participles, yet they cannot be used with the same freedom as in English, and it will often seem best to make substitutions for them similar to those just indicated for present participles."

4. Old Saxon.

In Old Saxon (cf. Behaghel, and Pratje, §§ 156, 159) we again meet with the adverbial participle denoting manner
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 339

(sorgondi, gornondi, greotandi, etc.), but not means. The only instances of the temporal participle are with slapandi and libbiandi. The other adverbial uses are unrepresented (cf. Behaghel, § 300). The adjectival (relative) use is commoner with the preterite than with the present. The co-ordinate participle is unknown; for the participles cited by Behaghel in § 300, B., are either predicative or modal.

Examples (all from the Heliand as given by Pratje):—

1. Adjectival (relative): 3391: huo ik hier brinnandi thrauerc tholon; 2776: that man iro Johannes ... hobid gavi alosit fan is lichamen; (2) Adverbial: Temporal: 1013: that gi so libbeandi thena landes uuard selvon gisahon; 701: sagda im an suefna slapandion on naht;—modal: 4588: thuo bigan thero erlo gihuic te o'remo ... sorgondi gisehan; 4071: griot gornondi; 2996: gruotta ina greotandi; etc. Pratje (§ 155. 2) considers uuillandi an adverb in 1965: thoh hie ... manno huilicon uuillandi forgeve uuatares drincan.

II.

Despite the professed incompleteness of the preceding presentation of the uses of the appositive participle in the Germanic languages exclusive of English, I believe it warrants us in drawing certain general conclusions concerning the origin of the appositive participle in the Germanic languages, as follows:—

1. The adverbial participle denoting manner and the adjectival (relative) past participle are most probably native to the Germanic languages. Perhaps, too, the adjectival and the temporal uses with words like be, live, and sleep are native.

2. All other uses of the appositive participle, whether present or past, are probably of Greek or Latin origin.

3. That the appositive use of the present participle having an object is derived from the Greek and the Latin is highly probable. True, the appositive participle in Ulfilas and in Tatian governs an object with extraordinary frequency; but
I believe that a comparison of the examples with the originals would show that in almost every case the construction is in direct imitation of the Greek and the Latin. Neither Gering nor Mourek cites all the examples of the participle with an object; Mourek does not give the Latin original along with the Old High German; and I have not made an exhaustive comparison in either case. But the slight study I have given forces me to the above conclusion. I find, for instance, that out of 151 present participles with a direct object in the Gothic Mark 139 correspond to Greek participles with objects; and that in most of the twelve exceptional cases the participle translates a Greek participle elsewhere in Mark. Mourek cites 140 examples of quedenti in Tatian; and, on turning to the Latin, I find that in 137 of these instances the Old High German participle is a direct translation of dicens. More than this, not a few of the Greek participles with an object that are cited by Gering (pp. 313 ff., 399 ff.) are turned by a finite verb, whereas the whole number of Greek verbs turned by Gothic participles is very small. In the more original Old High German texts, a present participle with an object is almost unknown. Of the appositive participles (present) cited from Otfrid by Erdmann only three have an object (singenti, i. 12. 22; hel-senti, i. 11. 46; ërënti, i. 5. 50). With the present appositive participles cited from Isidor by Rannow, an object occurs only four times, each time the participle of the verb quedan; in two of these instances in direct translation of the Latin dicens, and in the other two without any corresponding participle in the Latin. More than this, eighteen times Isidor translated a Latin participle having an object by a finite verb (co-ordinated nine and subordinated nine), nine of these being forms of dicens.—In Middle High German, too, an object is seldom found. Barz cites only three examples from Iwein and the Nibelungenlied (Nib. 2292: gie Wolfhart... houwende die Guntheres man; Iw. 531: daz ich suochende rite einen man; Iw. 4163: die reit ich suochende), and these are in connection
with a verb of motion, and waver between the predicative and the appositive use.—The comparative infrequency of the present participle with an object in New High German is known to all.—As for Old Saxon, not one of the genuine appositive participles cited by Pratje has an object.

III.

The other Germanic languages employed about the same substitutes for the Greek and Latin appositive participle as did Anglo-Saxon; hence this topic may be treated with great brevity.

1. The Co-ordinated Finite Verb.

Of the co-ordinated finite verb, Gering (p. 399 f.) cites about twenty-five examples from Ulfilas, such as Mk. 5. 41: κρατήσας τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ παιδίου λέγει = fairgrair bi handan þata barn qaþuh; J. 18. 22: ἐδοκεν ἡπαῖσμα . . . εἶπὼν = gaf slah . . . qaþuh; etc.—This translation is common in Old High German, also, ten examples occurring in Isidor (Rannow, p. 99 f.): 39. 26: etiam locus ipse coruscans miraculis . . . ad se omnem contrahat mundum = ioh auh dhiu selba stat chischeinīt . . . ioh zi œmu chidhinsit allan mittingart; 4. 33: respondens . . . ait = antuurta . . . quad; etc.

2. The Subordinated Finite Verb.

For the dependent clause as a translation of the Greek and Latin appositive participle in the other Germanic languages, see Gering, p. 395 ff.; Rannow, p. 100.

As to Gothic, Gering gives but two or three examples of this location in his treatment of the appositive participle (J. 13. 30: λαβῶν . . . ἑξηλθέν = ëpe andnam þana haib jains, suns galaip ut; Philip. 1. 27); but, as already stated, Gering limits the term appositive to the “adverbial” uses of the participle, and excludes therefrom the “adjectival,” unwisely considering all the latter “attributive.” Many of his attributive parti-
ciples are, according to our definition, appositive; and in not a few of these examples, as Gering states (p. 313), the Greek participle is translated by a Gothic subordinated finite verb introduced by a relative pronoun, as in: Mat. 6. 4, 6. 18: ὁ πατὴρ σου ὁ βλέπων ἐν τῷ κρυπτῷ = atta ἰεῖναι σαι παλιῳ in fulhnsja; Eph. 1. 3: θεὸς . . . ὁ εὐλογήσας ἡμᾶς = ὁῳ . . . iēi gaγιuφida uns; etc., etc. (about fifty examples in all). Moreover, as Gering tells us (p. 317 ff.), the Greek substantivized participle is often turned by a Gothic dependent clause. In reality, then, the translation of a Greek appositive participle (especially in its adjectival use) by a subordinated finite verb is very common in Gothic.

In Old High German, also, the dependent finite verb often translates a Latin appositive participle. Rannow (p. 100) cites ten examples from Isidor; of which I quote two only: 19. 14: secundum Moysi sententiam dicentis = after Moyses quhidim, ḏḥar ir quhad; 21. 16: sed semetipsis exinanivit formam servi accipiens = oh ir sīh selbun aridalida, ḏhuo ir seleches chilliühnissa infene.

3. The Prepositional Phrase.

Rannow (p. 102) cites one instance of this construction in Isidor: 19. 26: incarnatus et homo factus est = in fleisches liiḥemen uuardh uuordan; which should be compared with Bele2 239. 18: Cristus incarnatus = 310. 26: in menniscum lichoman.

4. The Infinitive.

Gering (p. 397) cites one example from the Gothic: Mk. 10. 46: ἐκάθητο παρὰ τὴν ὄδον προσαυτῶν = sat faur wig du aihtron, but the Greek participle here is better considered predicative.

5. The Adverb.

Four examples of this locution occur in Gothic (Gering, p. 306): 2 Cor. 13. 2, 10: ἀπὼν γράφω = aḥaŋro meljā; Phil. 1. 25, 27.

This substitution is very common in Gothic (Gering, p. 301 f.): *Mk.* 6. 9: ἰποδεδεμένος = gaskohs; etc., etc.—Six examples occur in Isidor (Rannow, p. 102): 33. 5: mente ceccati = muotes blinde; etc.


This construction occurs in Gothic (Gering, p. 303) and in Old High German (Rannow, p. 102). Examples:—(a) Gothic: *Mat.* 8. 16: προσήνεγκαν αὐτῷ δαιμονιζομένους τολαύς = atberun du imma daimonarjans managans; etc.;—(b) Old High German: Isidor, 21. 30: dominus numeravit scribens populos = druhtin saghida dhazs chiserip dhero folcho (see Rannow's footnote on this sentence).
CHAPTER VI.

THE ANGLO-SAXON APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE
AS A NORM OF STYLE.

In my dissertation on The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon a chapter is given to "The Absolute Participle as a Norm of Style," which is based on Professor Gildersleeve's essay "On the Stylistic Effect of the Greek Participle." In that chapter is discussed the stylistic effect not only of the absolute participle, but also, incidentally, of the appositive participle. I need not, therefore, detail here the theory there laid down, the more so that nothing has occurred to make me change the view then expressed. Since, however, this study may come into the hands of some to whom the earlier paper is not accessible, I shall briefly state the theory there given, and add such comments and illustrations as may seem called for by the present detailed investigation of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

The theory as to the stylistic effect of the absolute participle in Anglo-Saxon was summarized in these words (p. 52): "The stylistic effect of the absolute participle in Anglo-Saxon was much the same as in the classical languages: it gave movement to the sentence; it made possible flexibility and compactness. But, owing to the artificial position of the absolute construction in Anglo-Saxon, its stylistic value was reduced to a minimum, was indeed scarcely felt at all. The absolute participle rejected as an instrument of style, the Anglo-Saxon had no adequate substitute therefor. The two commonest substitutes, the dependent sentence and the coordinate clause, as used in Anglo-Saxon, became unwieldy and monotonous. Brevity and compactness were impossible; the sentence was slow in movement and somewhat cumber-
some. The language stood in sore need of a more flexible instrument for the notation of subordinate conceptions, of such an instrument as the absolute dative seemed capable of becoming but never became."

In the light of the foregoing history of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, does this theory as to the stylistic effect of the absolute participle apply likewise to the appositive participle? Was the appositive participle as artificial a construction as the absolute participle? or was it more or less naturalized, if not native, in Anglo-Saxon?

Undoubtedly the stylistic effect of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is to give the sentence movement, flexibility, and compactness; and it does this to a somewhat greater degree, I think, than could an equal number of absolute participles. To test this statement one need only compare a half dozen pages of Alfred, in which, as we have seen, the appositive participle (especially in certain uses) is rare, with the same number of Ælfric's, which are strewn therewith. The slowness and the clumsiness of the former are not more patent than the rapidity, the flexibility, and the grace of the latter. Space does not allow quotations, nor are they necessary.

But the above statement is with reference to the appositive participle as a whole, whereas in Anglo-Saxon, as we have learned, the appositive participle has three sharply differentiated uses. Let us look at each for a moment by itself.

In its adjectival use, the appositive participle contributes not only to rapidity and flexibility but also to picturesqueness. The two former effects were attained in both prose and poetry; the last, as a rule, in poetry only; and all three to a greater or less degree in all stages of the Anglo-Saxon period, at least so far as the preterite participle was concerned. For the adjectival use of the present participle the Anglo-Saxon went to the Latin, though not until the Late West Saxon period. What a boon this borrowing was is clearly revealed by a comparison of Alfred with Ælfric or with the Gospels; or, to give a more modern illustration, by comparing modern English with New High German, as,
for instance, in the examples quoted from von Jagemann in chapter v.

Of the adverbial uses, the Anglo-Saxon at the outset wielded with skill only that denoting manner, as in *swigende cwceft*, etc. How poor he was as compared with us may be readily realized if we suppose the modern Englishman deprived, as is the modern German, of the ability to express means, time, cause, concession, etc., by the appositive participle. That was the situation of the Early West Saxon; but, thanks to Ælfric and the translators of the *Gospels*, Anglo-Saxon borrowed from the Latin what was so sadly needed; and Ælfric's pages run as smoothly as do those of a modern Englishman. The fact, however, that these newly introduced uses of the adverbial appositive participle are so rare in the latter part of the *Chronicle* and in Wulfstan, leaves it doubtful whether the wisdom of Ælfric's adoption received as immediate recognition as it deserved; though the non-use in the former may be due to the fact that it professes to be merely a bald record of facts. It seems probable, nevertheless, that these uses did not become normal for English until after the close of the Anglo-Saxon period, largely perhaps through the Anglo-Saxon and Middle English translations of the Bible, supplemented by French influence.

The Anglo-Saxon stood in greater need, I think, of the co-ordinate participle than of the adverbial (exclusive of that denoting manner); and Alfred's persistent refusal to use it accounts in a large measure for the monotony of his style. Again Ælfric and the translators of the *Gospels*, discerning the need, borrowed from the Latin, this time the co-ordinate participle, and thereby gave to English a construction that, judged from the standpoint of style, was of immense value. Here, also, the difference between Alfred and Ælfric is the difference between modern English and modern German, happily illustrated in the examples cited from von Jagemann above (chapter v). A third time Ælfric's lead was coldly followed by his immediate successors (Wulfstan and the author(s) of the later *Chronicle*),
and the construction hardly became fixed until the Middle English period, again through the help of the biblical translations. The foregoing applies chiefly to the present participle; the preterite participle, being inherently unsuited to the co-ordinate use, is as rare in Ælfric as in modern English.

The chief shortcoming, however, of the Anglo-Saxon appositive participle was, I take it, that in no one of the three uses did the present participle originally have the power of governing an object in construction. The introduction of this use, from the Latin, by Ælfric and the Late West Saxon translators constitutes, to my mind, their chief contribution to English style; for, with the possible exception of the infinitive and the modern gerund, no single construction has contributed so much to the compactness and the flexibility of the modern English sentence. Here, too, the innovation was tardily accepted, being seldom resorted to by Wulfstan or by the author of the Peterborough Chronicle. The general adoption of the construction in English was largely due to the influence of the biblical translations. Finally, the difference between Alfred and Ælfric is once more paralleled in that between modern English and modern German.

The Anglo-Saxon substitutes for the appositive participle call for only brief comment. The most frequent substitute, the co-ordinated finite verb, does well enough for the co-ordinate participle, but for no other, since it ignores shades of meaning. The next most common, the subordinated finite verb, is ill fitted to take the place of the co-ordinate participle, since it unduly subordinates the idea of the participle to that of the principal verb; but it is an excellent substitute for the adjectival and the adverbial participle, and is often so used not only in Anglo-Saxon but also in modern English and in the other Germanic languages. Undoubtedly, however, the appositive participle is a more flexible instrument for the denotation of subordinate ideas than is the dependent finite verb; witness the difference in this regard between modern English and modern German.
CHAPTER VII.

RESULTS.

The following are in brief the results that I believe to be established by this investigation:—

1. In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle occurs oftenest in the nominative case, occasionally in the accusative and the dative, rarely in the genitive.

2. In Anglo-Saxon, especially in Late West Saxon and in the poems, the appositive participle is often not inflected, much oftener indeed than has hitherto been supposed. For details see p. 150 ff.

3. When inflected, the appositive participle almost invariably follows the strong declension.

4. As a rule, the appositive participle follows its principal, though occasionally (about 100 times in all) it precedes.

5. The uses of the appositive participle are three-fold:—
   (1) Adjectival, in which the participle is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause.
   (2) Adverbial, in which the participle is equivalent to a dependent adverbial (conjunctive) clause; subdivided into (a) modal (manner and means), (b) temporal, (c) causal, (d) final, (e) concessive, and (f) conditional clauses. Some participles denoting manner, however, are equivalent, not to dependent adverbial clauses, but to simple adverbs.
   (3) Co-ordinate, in which the participle is substantially equivalent to an independent clause; subdivided into (a) the "circumstantial" participle in the narrower sense, which merely denotes an accompanying circumstance; and (b) the
"iterating" participle, which simply repeats the idea of the chief verb.

6. As to the origin of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, in some uses it is (A) native and in others (B) foreign (Latin).

A. Native.

(1) In the following uses the appositive participle appears to be a native English idiom:—
(a) The adjectival use of the preterite participle and, perhaps, of a few slightly verbal present participles like living, lying (liegende), etc.
(b) The modal use of the present and of the preterite participle when each denotes manner.
(c) Perhaps the temporal use in a few present participles of slight verbal force like being, living, and sleeping.
(2) The grounds for the statements in (1) are as follows:
(a) In the uses there specified the appositive participle is found in Early West Saxon. (b) It occurs, also, in Late West Saxon, in the more original prose (the Chronicle, the Laws, and Wulfstan), and in the poems not known to be based on Latin originals as well as in those believed to be translations. (c) In a number of instances in the translations, the Old English participle does not correspond to an appositive participle in the Latin original, but to various other constructions (see Tables at end of Chapter III). (d) In these uses the appositive participle is common in the other Teutonic languages.

B. Foreign (Latin).

(3) In the uses named below, on the contrary, the appositive participle is not a native English construction, but is borrowed from the Latin:—
(a) The adjectival use of the present participle except in a few that have but little verbal force like living and lying.
(b) The modal use of the present and of the preterite participle when each denotes means.
(c) The temporal use of the participle except in a few slightly verbal present participles like *being*, *living*, and *sleeping*.
(d) The causal use of the present and of the preterite participle, though the latter may in part be an extension of the adjectival preterite participle.
(e) The final use of the participle, though this may in a slight degree be due to the frequent predicative use of the present participle after verbs of motion in Anglo-Saxon.
(f) The concessive use of the participle.
(g) The conditional use of the participle.
(h) The co-ordinate use of the participle.
(i) The present participle (whether adjectival, adverbial, or co-ordinate) when it governs an object in construction.

(4) The statements of (3) are believed to be substantiated by the following considerations: (a) The specified uses of the appositive participle are practically unknown in Early West Saxon; and, in the few instances in which they do occur, they are usually in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle. (b) In hundreds of instances Alfred expressly avoided the constructions, although they occurred on every page of his Latin originals. (c) These uses are very rare in the more original prose (the *Chronicle*, the *Laws*, and Wulfstan), and in almost every instance have been traced to a direct or indirect Latin prototype. (d) They are very rare, too, in Anglo-Saxon poetry, and are found almost exclusively in the poems known to rest on Latin originals. (e) They seldom occur in the other Germanic languages except in the more slavish translations. (f) They are very common, on the other hand, in the later and closer Anglo-Saxon translations (*Ælfric*, the *Gospels*, and *Benet*).—The cogency of these arguments varies somewhat with respect to the several uses; concerning which see the detailed treatment in Chapter III.

(5) From the above statements (1–4) as to the different origin of the several uses of the appositive participle we draw
this general conclusion: Anglo-Saxon was favorable to the appositive participle with pronounced adjectival (descriptive) force, but was unfavorable to the appositive participle with strong verbal (assertive) force.

7. Originally in Anglo-Saxon, the present appositive participle did not have the power of governing a direct object in construction. All present participles with a direct object are due to Latin influence.

8. Nor did the preterite appositive participle have the power of governing an accusative of the direct object. Only one example occurs in the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature, and that is in imitation of the Latin original.

9. The Anglo-Saxon substitutes for the appositive participle were:—

(1) Most frequently a co-ordinated finite verb.
(2) Somewhat less frequently a subordinated finite verb.
(3) Not infrequently a prepositional phrase.
(4) Occasionally a verb in the infinitive mood, both inflected and uninflected.
(5) Rarely an attributive participle.
(6) In a few instances an absolute participle.
(7) Occasionally an adverb.
(8) Rarely an adjective.
(9) Very rarely a substantive.

10. Although my treatment of the appositive participle in the other Germanic languages is professedly not exhaustive, it seems to make probable the following conclusions:—

(1) The uses of the appositive participle in the other Teutonic languages are on the whole substantially the same as in Anglo-Saxon, but with considerable variation in the different languages and authors. Ulfilas and Tatian, for instance, are much more addicted to the appositive participle, especially that with verbal force, than are any of the Anglo-Saxon writers except the author of *Benet*, which is a gloss.
(2) In the other Teutonic languages as in Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle is of two-fold origin. The adverbial participle denoting manner, the adjectival (relative) past participle, the adjectival present and the temporal participle in such verbs as be, live, and sleep, are perhaps native. In all other uses the appositive participle, whether present or past, is probably of Greek (Ulfilas) or Latin origin, though in one or two of these functions, as in Anglo-Saxon, the appositive participle may in part be an extension of the attributive or the predicative use of the participle. The present appositive participle with an object in construction seems to be of wholly foreign origin.

(3) The substitutes for the appositive participle are about the same in the other Germanic Languages as in Anglo-Saxon.

11. As for its stylistic effect, in Anglo-Saxon as in the classical languages the appositive participle conduces to rapidity, compactness, and flexibility. In the adjectival use of the preterite participle and in the adverbial use of the present and of the preterite denoting manner, this is more or less exemplified in all periods of Anglo-Saxon; and in the poetry the participle contributes, also, to picturesqueness. The other uses of the appositive participle were practically ignored by the Early West Saxons, and to this fact are largely due the unwieldiness and the monotony of Alfred's style. Ælfric and the translators of the Gospels, on the other hand, adopted these uses from the Latin, and handled the same almost as skilfully as do modern Englishmen; whence results in great measure the excellence of Ælfric's style in point of flexibility and grace. But these innovations were looked upon coldly by Ælfric's immediate successors (Wulfstan and the author of the Peterborough Chronicle), and scarcely became thoroughly naturalized during the Anglo-Saxon period.

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.
ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

Originally not intending to discuss the inflection of the appositive participle, I did not in my first draft jot down all the peculiar forms observed. After deciding to treat the subject, I thought that the Introduction could be held in type until the final proving and printing of the Statistics. But, as their bulk made this impossible, the following additions and corrections are called for in the section of the Introduction (iv) dealing with the inflection of the appositive participle:

THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

NS. (p. 150):—L. 7 from below: change three to two, and strike out Ælf. L. S. 282. 5; for, after the preparation of the Statistics, I received vol. iv of Skeat’s edition of this work, in the “Errata” of which he corrects feohtend to feohtende. This, of course, changes feohtend in my Statistics (p. 197, l. 27).

L. 3 from below: change four to five, and add 104. 16 after 95. 11.

L. 1 from below: to exceptions add -ande: Benet 1 68. 1; -ynde: Mat. 1 9. 29.

ASM. (p. 151, l. 6):—Ælf. L. S. 78. 489 has -ande, which reduces the number of -ende by one.

N. and A. PMFN. (p. 151, l. 10): to the exceptions add:
(1) masculine: -ande: Benet 1 55. 4, Greg. 1 123. 16: -onde: Bede 1 72. 9, Bened. 9. 7; -ynde: Mat. 1 9. 27, 31; (2) neuter: -ande: Ælf. L. S. 224. 86.

THE PTERITE PARTICIPLE.

NSM. (p. 151, l. 16):—Benet 1 100. 3 has bææht for bææht; and Chron. 1048 E has unswican.
DSMN. (p. 151, l. 22):—insert -on after -an.
ASM. (p. 151, l. 6 from below):—to the inflectional ending add -um for -an, weak (Bede\textsuperscript{1} 130. 33), and see p. 153, where the example is quoted in full.
ASN. (p. 152, l. 1):—Mat.\textsuperscript{1} 11. 7 has -yd instead of -ed.
NPM. (p. 152, l. 2):—Laws (Wihtr., c. 4) has -yne instead of -ene; and Benet\textsuperscript{1} 113. 9 has asterh's for asterht.
NAPN. (p. 152, l. 7):—to the inflectional endings add -u (Greg.\textsuperscript{1} 245. 8\textsuperscript{a} & 8\textsuperscript{b}), in which the participles are probably accusatives rather than nominatives (as given on p. 173, l. 10). Beow. 3049 has surhetone instead of surhetene.
GP. (p. 152, l. 10):—to the exception add geferede: Elene 992.
DPM. (p. 152, l. 11):—to the inflectional ending add -e: ÆElfr. Hept. (Judges 16. 7).

On p. 203, ll. 8, 18, and 25, strike out unevð.

The following typographical errors should be noted:—
P. 146, l. 26: change dash to hyphen.
P. 147, l. 2: for rechfertigen read rechfertigen.
P. 149, l. 16: for Indo-Germanie read Indo-Germanic.
P. 180, l. 23: for unbefohtene read unbefohtene.
P. 181, l. 11: for Ŝinge read Ŝinge.
P. 185, l. 26: for geondead = angaritia: 7. 54 read geneadod = 54. 7: angariati.
P. 288, l. 12: for ewedende read ewedende.

---

A NOTE OF THANKS.

I wish heartily to thank my colleagues in the School of English, Drs. Killis Campbell and Pierce Butler, and my honored teacher, Professor James W. Bright, for gracious help in the issuing of this monograph. Each of the three has kindly assisted in reading the proof, and has offered valuable suggestions for the betterment of my study.

M. C., JR.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 355

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

I. Texts Read.

a. Anglo-Saxon.


Ælf. Hept. = ib.


Ælf. L. S. = Skeat, Ælfric’s Lives of Saints, E. E. T. S., nos. 76, 82, 94, London, 1881, 1885, 1890. Vol. iv (1900) was received too late to be read for this study. Vols. i and ii are cited simply by page and line; vol. iii, by number of homily and of line.


Boeth.¹ = Sedgefield, King Alfred’s Old English Version of Boethius De Consolatione Philosophiae, Oxford, 1899. [For the prose only; the Metres are taken from Grein-Wülker’s Bibl. der ags. Poesie.]

Christ = Albert S. Cook, The Christ of Cynewulf, Boston, 1900.


Poems = Grein-Wülker's Bibliothek der aqs. Poesie, 3 vols., Kassel, 1881-1898. [For all the poems except Cynewulf's Christ, which see above.]

Ps. Th.¹ = Thorpe, Libri Psalmorum Versio antiqua Latina cum Paraphrasi Anglo-Saxonica, Oxonii, 1835. [For the prose psalms only; the poetical ones are cited from Grein-Wülker.]


b. Latin.


Benet.² = Latin in Benet.¹

Boeth.² = Peiper, Boetii Philosophiae Consolationis Libri Quinque, Leipzig, 1871.


Hept.* = Latin Heptateuch, etc., given in Ælf. Hept., which see.

Oros.* = Latin in Oros.¹

Ps. Th.*² = Latin in Ps. Th.¹ [The Introductions are taken from Bruce in II.]

II. Works Cited.

Bartlett, Helen: The Metrical Division of the Paris Psalter, Baltimore, 1896.


Behaghel, O.: Die Syntax des Heliand, Wien, 1897.


THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 357

Conradi, B. : Darstellung der Syntax in Cynewulf's Juliana, Halle, 1886.
Curtius, G. : Erläuterungen zu meiner Griechischen Schulgrammatik, 3rd 
ed., Prag, 1875.
Döbrück, B. : Vergleichende Syntax der Indo-Germanischen Sprachen, 3 
vols., Strassburg, 1893-1900.
Dewitz, A. : Alfreds weats. Übersetzung der Cura Pastoralis Gregors u. ihr 
Verhältnis zum Originale, Bunzlau, 1889.
Draeger, A. : Historische Syntax der Lateinischen Sprache, 2nd ed., Leipzig, 
1878-1881.
Einenkel, E. : Strefzüge durch die Mittelengl. Syntax, Münster, 1887.
Erdmann, A. : The History of the Verbal Forms in -ing: Part I. Old 
Anglo-Saxon Period, Stockholm, 1871.
Erdmann, O. : Untersuchungen über die Syntax der Sprache Otfrids, Halle, 
1874.
Erdmann, O. : Grundzüge der Deutschen Syntax, 1, Stuttgart, 1886; II, 
by Erdmann and Mensing, 1898.
Falk, H., og Torp, A. : Dansk-Norskens Syntax i Historisk Fremstilling, 
Kristiana, 1900.
149-168, Baltimore, 1899.
Flamme, J. : Syntax der Blickling Homilies, Bonn, 1885.
Forster, M. : Ueber die Quellen von Ælfrie's Homilie Catholicae, Berlin, 
1892.
Furkert, M. : Der Syntax. Gebrauch des Verbums in Guthlac, Leipzig, 
1899.
Gering, H. : "Ueber den Syntakt. Gebrauch der Partizipia im Got- 
Gildersleeve, B. L. : "On the Stylistic Effect of the Greek Participle," 
Gollancz, I. : Cynewulf's Christ, London, 1892.
Gollancz, I. : The Exezer Book; An Anthology of A.-S. Poetry, E. E. T. S., 
ed., Boston, 1890.
Grimm, J.: Andreas und Elene, Cassel, 1840.
Helm, F.: Quaestiones Syntaxicae de Participiorum Usu Tacitino Velleiano Sallustiano, 1879.
Hickes: Institutiones Grammaticae, Oxoniae, 1689;—Thesaurus Grammatico-Criticus, Oxoniae, 1705.
Kent, C. W.: Elene, Boston, 1889.
Kinard, J. P.: A Study of Wulfstan’s Homilies: Their Style and Sources, Baltimore, 1897.
Lücke, O.: Absolute Participia im Gotischen u. ihr Verhältn. zum Gr. Original, Magdeburg, 1876.
Lund, G. F. V.: Oldnordisk Ordföjningslære, København, 1862.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 359


Ott, J. H.: Über die Quellen der Heiligenleben in Ælfric's Lives of Saints, i., Halle, 1892.


Schrader, B.: Studien zur Ælfrieschen Syntax, Jena, 1887.
Schürmann, J.: Darstellung der Syntax in Cynewulf's Elene, Paderborn, 1884.
Tammelin, E. J. : De Participiis Prisciæ Latinitatis Questiones Syntacticae, Helsingfors, 1889.
Thomas, C. : A Practical German Grammar, New York, 1895 (?) 
Torp: see Falk.
Von Jageman, H. C. G. : Elements of German Syntax, New York, 1892.
Wunderlich, H. : Beiträge zur Syntax des Notker'schen Boethius, Berlin, 1883 (?) .

M. C., JR.
Callaway, M.
The appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon